A SPANISH GRAMMAR,

first collected and published by *Richard Perciuale Gent. Now augmented and increased with the declining* of all the Irregular and hard verbes in that toong, with diuers other especiall Rules and necessarie Notes for all *such as shall be desirous to attaine the per-*fection of the Spanish *tongue.*

Done by IOHN MINSHEU
Professor of Languages in London.

Hereunto for the yoong beginners learning and ease, are annexed Speeches, Phrases, and Prouerbes, expounded out of diuers Authors, setting downe the line and the leafe where in *the same bookes they shall finde them, whereby they* may not onely vnderstand them, but by them vnderstand others, and the rest as they shall meete with them.

Viresçit vulnere Virtus.

Imprinted at London, by
Edm. Bollifant.
1599

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFVLL GENTLEMEN STVDENTS OF Grayes Inne health and happines, and to the *affected to languages there, daily encreaſe* with perfect accompliſhment of the moſt commendable qualities.

Vcius *a famous Roman meeting on a time with the Emperor* Marcus, *asked him whither he went: who anſwered, I am going to* Sextus, vt diſcam quod nondum ſcio, *that I may learne that which I doe not yet know.* Diogenes *the philoſopher went to* Athens *to* Antiſthenes *to learne of him ſomewhat that he was ignorant of; but* Antiſthenes *not willing to impart at that time any of his doctrine, repulſed him: the other left not off his purpoſe, but more and more importuned him in ſuch ſort, that* Antiſthenes *taking vp a ſtaffe to driue him away,* Diogenes *ſtretched out his necke, willing him to ſtrike on hardly, for he ſhould not finde a ſtaffe ſo hard, that could driue him from him ſo long as he might learne any matter by him woorthie the hearing. I ſpeake this Gentlemen, meaning none of you to be bound by their example, ſeeing one was an Emperor and might doe what he liſt, and the other a Cinick philoſopher that would doe that he ought: therefore if a man haue any learning or qualitie, let him bring it to you, and if it be too tedious vnto you, or hinder your ſport, rather then be troubled with him, bob him or flout and ſcoffe him away. Be not imitators of* Demoſthenes *which ſpent more oyle in the lampe in ſtudying to enrich his minde, then wine to comfort his bodie; but rather waſte your wine and ſpare your candles: neither be ſo fooliſh as* Cleanthes *the philoſopher, that drew water in the night that he might follow his ſtudie in the day; rather take your eaſe in the night and your pleaſure in the day, becauſe* Mutantur tempora & nos mutamur in illis. *Yet Gentlemen, if you doe but ſet before your eies theſe famous men, which haue beene and are of the houſe you now remaine in, (the names of ſome few I can now recite) as Sir* Nicholas Bacon *Lord Keeper, Lord* Burleigh *Lord Treaſurer, Sir* Walter Mildmay *and Sir* Francis Walſingham, *learned* Fitzherbert *Lord chiefe Iuſtice of the common*

pleas which abridged the law, and Sir William Stanford, *which wrote the pleas of the crowne, Sergeant* Yelverton, *Sergeant* Daniell, *Sergeant* Spurling, *Maſter* Brograue, *Maſter* Stanhop, *Maſter* Heſquit, *Maſter* Anthonie *and Maſter* Francis Bacon, *with diuers others might well moone you to conſider that* Qui veult plus qu'vn autre valoir, doibt plus qu'vn autre ſcavoir: *He that will be eſteemed aboue another man, muſt haue more knowledge then another man: And* Meglio eſſer mendicante che ignorante, *Better to bee a begger then barren of good letters. But theſe letters are painefully purchaſed, why* Petit ardua virtus; Difficilis virtutis via; Difficilia quæ pulchra: *Therefore* Pythagoras *counſelled his familiar friendes that they ſhould chooſe out the beſt kinde of life, although the moſt difficult: and* Saluſt *ſaith, deckings pertaine to women, and trauels belong to men: and* Seneca *affirmeth, that baſe is that honor which is gotten with idlenes, which the Roman pollicie when it flouriſhed confirmed by an auncient lawe duly kept, that euery father that had children of the age of tenne yeeres ſhould become ſuretie for them, that they ſhoulde not liue idle, or commit any exceſſe, which was ſo neerely looked vnto, that they publikely chaſtiſed* Cato *the Cenſors ſonne for a ſaucines committed, and baniſhed a brother of good old* Cina *for liuing idlie among them. None durſt preſume to go into the ſtreetes but hee carried ſome token in his hande what kinde of life or ſtudie hee followed, which if in theſe times it were in force, how many ſtreete walkers woulde retire themſelues to ſome vertuous ſtudies. But methinke I heare ſome ſaie,* Ars longa & vita brevis, *I anſwere them with the Thebane Philoſopher, which in the* 75. *Olympiade, came to the ſolemne ſports kept about the citie Olympia in honor of* Iupiter, *who had made all the apparell he ware with his owne hands: his ſhooes he had ſowed his ſhirt he had wouen &c. being demanded where he had learned ſo manie mens arts, anſwered, In the beginning there was but one arte at all, & that the ſloth of men had cauſed that one to be diuided into many, and how euerie particular man with diligence and labour might obtaine to the knowledge of that that all men in generall had knowledge of. To this purpoſe* Pythagoras *ſaid,* He that knoweth not what he ought to know, is a brute beaſt among men: He that knoweth no more then he hath need of, is a man among brute beaſts: He that knoweth al that may be knowen, is a God among men. *So many examples preſent themſelues that rather time would faile then matter herein, & for that my caſe ſtandeth now rather to demand remedie and not giue counſell, or to giue thankes for good turnes receiued, and not preſcribe precepts, I thinke good briefely and plainely to ſhew vnto you how hauing founde my ſelfe beholding to ſome of you, whom I had read vnto in the toongs, I thought nothing could better agree with my profeſſion as to ſhewe my gratefull minde towards you, then by labouring for your eaſe, in theſe inſtructions of the Spaniſh toong: which if they be thankefully receiued, I ſhall thinke my labour well imploied. Yet before I coulde make an ende of this and the Dictionarie, I did as* Robertus Stephanus *ſaith of himſelfe in gathering togither his Dictionaries called* Theſaurus linguæ Græcæ & Latinæ; *I haue made* Theſaurum, *that is, a Treaſure for others, but thereby haue made my ſelfe a bagger, whereof ſome of the right vertuous and woorthie gentlemen of that your houſe, (to whom I am moſt beholding, and therefore ſtande moſt in affection bounde) vnderſtanding,*

Pythageras.

derſtanding, wiſhed me to goe forewarde in ſo good a woorke, and not to giue ou r for ſome wants: which then of themſelues they ſupplied, whoſe good kindnes if I forget, I wiſh the law of Draco, (which was to puniſh with death, if there were any found ſo vnthankfull as not to requite a good turne, or at leaſt to forbeare to acknowledge his benefactors for the ſame) might be inflicted on me: for there can be no greater iniurie offered to a free minde, then to bee reputed ingratefull: although in theſe daies fower as great euils left vnpuniſhed as thoſe that are puniſhed, Vntemperatenes, Vnſhamefaſtnes, Vnfaithfulnes, and Vnthankefulnes. But to begin with my benefactors in this worke in order as they began with mee in Graies Inne, firſt Maſter William Willoughby, a gentleman as vertuouſlie minded and of as good carriage as the reſt: next Maſter Henrie Bing, whoſe excellent learning, placed togither with ſuch gentlemanlike conditions, makes him beloued among the Elders, and honored among the yoonger ſort: after him Maſter Frances Barneham, and Maſter Iames Hewes, endued with exceeding good wits, and no leſſe good natures: I may not forget the good woorths of Maſter Robert Hill, and Maſter Cheeke, gentlemen well ſtudied in the moſt commendable kindes of learning: Maſter Dauiſon of excellent learning, wit and vertues: Maſter Helmes and Maſter Gill both for their good parts better knowne then I can heere ſet downe: Maſter Thomas Maſon, and Maſter Iohn Roberts, adorned with ornaments of languages, to their other learning and vertues: Maſter Archer as he is well read in language, ſo is he a good fauourer of learning. The reſt of the well accompliſht yoong gentlemen whom I know not, I ſaie of them as my minde is towards them beſt: Gentlemen, if for theſe praiſes you ſhall ane plaie on another, I pray you caſt all on mee, for I proteſt none of them euer knewe that I ment to write vnto them, much leſſe put any of their names in print. Thus wiſhing to you as much as Cicero writing to his friend Atticus, would limite to be wiſhed to his deereſt friends, viz. To enioy health, to poſſeſſe honor, and neuer to ſuffer want,

I reſt:

At your command

Iohn Minsheu.

To the Reader.

IF it be vanitie and vexation of minde, for a man to toile in this life to gather riches togither, when he knowes not whether he be wiſe or fooliſh that ſhall enioy it: we may thinke the ſweate of our ſpirits and the toile of our bodies, to be altogither vaine, which write or print, when we cannot tell whether they will prooue ſober or franticke, to whom we leaue the poſſeſſion of our trauels. But the Spaniard ſaith, *Quien de miédo ſe murió de cagaxónes le hizié-ron la ſepoltura*; and becauſe as the Italian ſaying is, *A molti puzza l'ambro*, Amber is accounted ſtinking by many: and *Dal aſino non ne hai che calzi & petti:* I am reſolued for this once to put on merchants eares, to heare with patience euerie mans ſpeech and diſpraiſings of his wares, becauſe *Quot homines, tot ſententiæ*, So many men, ſo many mindes. Therefore he that ſhould leaue off any good worke for any mans ill ſpeech, may well be likened to that poore ſeely fellow, which on a time went with one of his ſonnes with his Aſſe before him to the wood, to fetch him a loade thereof for his wife and children, and meeting trauellers by the way; ſome miſliking with him that he ſhould goe on foote, and let his Aſſe goe leere; others, that he roade himſelfe, and ſuffered his childe to goe a foote; others, that he loaded the poore Aſſe with two perſons, being ſcarce able to carrie himſelfe; others, when he left his ſonne alone riding and himſelfe go on foote; in ſuch ſort that the countrey fellow could not tel what to do, ſeeing do what he could, ſtill he found reprehenders: whereupon he would goe no further forward, but returned ſad home to his houſe without wood, where he remained for feare of fault finders, till he and his houſhold were neere ſtarued with colde, till at laſt finding his owne ſimplicitie, he returned to the wood, and to as many as he met by the way, he ſaid; *Hee that paſſeth for other mens ſpeeches and repreeſes, endureth colde and a thouſand greefes*; and he that will throw a ſtone at euerie dog, ſhall haue a wearie arme: but I hope, *Qui bien ſerá, bien aurá*, And for all the dogs barking, the moone will ſtand where it did. And I ſay to the malitious, *Mets ta main ſovent en ton ſein, et tu ne meſdirás de ton prochain.* And let them remember, that *Chi fa quello che non deve, gli avien quel che non crede*, According to a Hiſtorie I haue read of an Emperour, who had his brothers ſonne for his cupbearer: The Emperours ſteward and vncle, for enuie perſwaded the cupbearer that his breath did ſtinke, and wiſhed therefore to turne his face from the Emperour when he deliuered the cup till remedie were found: forthwith he told the Emperour, that his cupbearer had defamed him to all his court, by ſaying his breath did ſtinke; and to know it for a certaintie, he likewiſe told him how he ſhould ſee the cupbearer turne away his face from him when he came neere him; whereupon the Emperour conceiued ſuch wrath againſt him, (as the ſaying is, the anger of a Prince the meſſenger of death) that

that he ſent expreſſe commaund to his burners of bricke, that they ſhould burne that man that came vnto them firſt the next morrow; and likewiſe commaunded his cupbearer to be there ſo earely that none might be before him: on the morrow morning verie earely the cupbearer going, and paſſing by a church in the way went in and fell into ſuch a ſound ſleepe, that it was the after noone before he could awake. The ſteward in the meane time to ſee the euent of the cupbearer, went and was burned himſelfe aliue. The cupbearer at his returne ſignified to the Emperour what had happened, and alſo was deſirous to knowe of the Emperour why he ſhould ſend him thither,&c. If neither Hiſtories nor reaſon perſwade them, they muſt needs be anſwered with ſilence, and ſo gentle Reader I reſt ſilent from troubling thee or them herewith any longer, more grieued at my miſhap and diſabilitie, then wanting good will or liking to doe thee ſeruice.

Hæc raptim.
Vale.

Iohn Minſhew.

In opus M. Minſheui edendum,
Iohannis Keperi generoſi
ἐξαπχὸν.

Qui cupis auriferi contingere flumen Iberi
Vocibus & veris noſcere gentis opes,
Vel mores, vel quas exercet Iberia merces,
Heſperiam & totam noſcere quiſquis aues:
Minſhæum *legito, lectum (mihi crede) probabis,*
Ingenium, gentum, munera, verba, fidem:
Qui totidem ſubijt noctéſque diéſque labores,
Et flores veluti ſedula carpſit apes;
Qui tibi qui patriæ, ſeſe ſumptumque dicauit,
Edidit, & tantæ ſedulitatis opus,
Aut lauda, aut ſaltem noli mordere, latrando
Zoile, tabificus, ne videare, canis.

Soneto de un capitan Eſpañol
del Autór.

De un diamantino muro circuydo
Con puertas de metál ynpenetrable;
Y por guarda un dragón fiero eſpantáble,
Era el huérto de Atlante defendido:
Mas ſiendo del fuerte Ercules vençido,
Fue abierta la puerta yncontraſtable,
Y las pomas de précio yneſtimáble
Gozáron luego quantos han querido,
Vos *Mincheu* ſoys el Ercules famoſo,
Que a peſar de la ynbidia (dragon fiero)
Abriſtes puerta al huerto ameno umbroſo,
De la yſpanica lengua, que primero
Cerrada eſtubo al yngles curioſo,
Do gozara pomas de oro verdadero.

The Proeme.

Paniſh is a ſpeech, whereof in times paſt (in Spaine) there hath beene fower kinds vſed: The firſt and ancienteſt is the Biskaine, which was the ſpeech of the prouince of Biskay and Nauarre: it hath his originall from the Caldean toong, as the learned in them both affirme, to whome it plainly appeereth that this is of greateſt antiquitie.

Fower ſorts of Spaniſh.
1. Biskay toong moſt ancient.
This toong drawen from the Caldean.

The next is that which was ſpoken in the kingdom of Granado, and in parte in the kingdomes of Andaluzía, Valencia, and Aragon, and was the Arabique, whoſe originall is the Hebrewe almoſt among them quite worne out, yet to this daie they keepe the pronunciation of ſome of their letters ſtill, as ç, G, j, X, Z.

2. Arabique toong in olde time vſed in Granado, Andaluzia, Valencia, and Aragon, and yet retaine it in the pronunciation of theſe letters, ç, g, j, x, z.

The thirde is the Catalan, which is a kinde of French, and had his beginning from the prouince of Gaſcoigne, from the ancient citie Limoyes: they ſpake this in the kingdoms of Cataluna, Mallorca, Menorca, Iuiça and Cerdena. This Cátalan toong was called Prouençal: and the Italians confeſſe that the Prouençals were the firſt inuentors of their rimes and verſes, which are ſo much priſed in Italie where Petraque, Boccace, and Dante, giue ſome teſtimonie in retaining their wordes in manie places.

3. Catalan toong or Prouençal, a kinde of French, had originall from Gaſcoigne, and was vſed in Cataluña, Malorca, Iuiça, Cerdeña.

The fourth is that which is now at this day commonly vſed and ſpoken thorowe all Spaine, and is called Léngua vulgár, the mother toong, otherwiſe Léngua Caſtellána, or Eſpañola, the Caſtilian or Spaniſh toong, principally vſed in Aragon, Andalucia, Múrcia, Caſtilla, Núeua, and Veja, León: alſo in Portugall, although the Portugall toong haue ſuch difference in certaine wordes and pronunciations, that it may well be called a language by it ſelfe, euen as the Engliſh and Scottiſh, yet in truth, it is not ſo ſeuered, but that they ſprange from one fountaine, and haue one deſcendence.

4. The Spaniſh now vſed.
Difference betweene the Spaniſh and Portugall toong.

This Lengua vulgár or Spaniſh toong draweth his originall from the Latine or Romaine, and becauſe the Romaine conquerours were moſt politicke in prouiding for the continuance of their eſtates & language to their poſteritie, by planting where they woone, * Colonies and garriſons; as alſo not permitting any ſtranger to the priuiledge of their lawes or freedome of their townes, to buie, ſell, or traffique, but in the Romaine or Latine toong, as in Spaine they haue done: Therefore the Spaniſh retaineth ſtill to this daie ſo much of the Latine toong. And by reaſon of the Incurſion and ouerrunning of ſo many ſtrange nations, as the Africans inhabiting about Carthage, called Carthaginians, Gothes, Huns, and Vandals, which ceaſed not till they had ouerrunne the moſt part of Europe, yet ſo ſetled themſelues in Andaluzía in Spaine, that they called it by their owne name Vandaluzia or Vandalia of Vandalles, as alſo Africans inhabiting Mauritania called Moores, whoſe firſt comming in, proceeded from the licenti ous li-

* A Colonie is a place inhabited, whither people are ſent to dwell: or people ſent to inhabite ſuch place: or a citie, the people whereof once came from another citie or countrey.
Why the Spaniſh keepeth ſo much of the Latine.
Andaluzia, whereof firſt ſo named.

uing and vnbrideled lust of Don Rodrigo *then king, in dishonouring and deflowring a ladie called* Cáva *the daughter of earle* Iulian, *one of his nobles.*

Howe the Moores first entred and conquered Spaine. Chro. of Spaine.

By meanes heereof, this language remaineth so altered and changed from his owne first propertie and nature, admitting wordes, accents, and pronunciations of other strange nations, as it is become a language of it selfe compounded of the Latine and aboue named toongs: but yet so, that it hath much more of the Latine then of all the other, whereby it may be called the Latine toong altered or corrupted.

For Spanish wordes comming from the Latine, marke the table heere following and their like.

Spanish wordes drawen from the Moorish toong begin much with Al, *as* Alcúza *a vessell for oyle:* Alfidél, *or* Alfilér, *a pin:* Almúd, *a measure, a pecke:* Alguarísmo, *Arithmeticke:* Almoháda, *a pillow, &c. or in* ç, *as* çaherír, *to vpbraid,* çahórda, *a hogstie: or sounde on* r, *or* x, Almaráxa, *an ewer of glasse:* Xabón *soape:* Almoradúx, *marjoram:* Arredrár, *to driue away:* Arrélde, *fower pounde waight, &c. also in* z, *as* Zagál, *a shepheard. And at this day the Moores in speaking Spanish for* júro a Dios, *I sweare by God, they saie* jureux a Deux: *for* Hombre, *they say* Homber, *for* Vuéstra mercéd, *your worship or mastership, they saie* Voxár mérxe.

Generall

Generall Obſeruations from the Latine for the framing of the SPANISH.

Subſtantiues of the Latines in *as*, as *Charitas, Maieſtas, Crudelitas, Ciuitas, Fidelitas, Securitas, Obſcuritas, Conformitas, Calamitas, Voluntas, &c.* in Spaniſh thus, Caridád. Mageſtád. Crueldád. Ciudád. Fedelidád. Seguridád. Eſcuridád. Conformidád. Calamidád. Voluntád.

The moſt part of words in Latine beginning with *Pl.* changed in Ll, as *Plenus, Planus, Pluuia, Plaga, Plorare.* In Spaniſh, Lléno. Lláno. Llúvia. Llága. Llorár.

In like ſort *F.* turned into *H*, as *Facere, Faba, Fax, Falco, Farina, Fœtor, Formoſus, Ferrum, Feruor.* Spaniſh, Hazér. Háva. Héz. Halcón. Harína. Hedór. Hermóſo, Hiérro, Hervór.

The Latine ending in *io*, made Spaniſh by putting n to it, as *Educatio, Religio, Electio,* Spaniſh, Educación. Religión. Elección.

The Latine ending in *um*, by changing *um* into o, as *Ornamentum, Experimentum, Exemplum.* Spaniſh, Ornaménto, Experiménto, Exémplo.

The Latine ending in *lis*, by taking away *is*, as *Materialis, Finalis, Subtilis, Debilis, &c.* Spaniſh, Materiál. Finál. Sutíl. Débil.

The Latine ending in the Infinitiue mode in *e*, by taking away *e* by *Apocope*, as *Caſtigare, Amare, Tenere, Perdere, Sentire, Salire.* Spaniſh, Caſtigár. Amár. Tenér. Perdér. Sentír. Salír.

By adding to the end of a word by *Paragoge*, as *Apoſtema*, *Appetere*, *Anas*. } Spaniſh, { Apoſtemación. Apetecér. A'nade.

By adding to the middle of a word by *Epentheſis*, as *Certum*, *Cœlum*, *Membrum*, *Meſſis*. } Spaniſh, { Ciérto. Cielo. Miembro. Miéſſe.

By adding to the beginning of a word by *Protheſis*, as *Plumeſcere*, *Capiſtrare*, *Scala*, *Scandalum*. } Spaniſh { Emplumecér. Encabiſtrár. Eſcála. Eſcándalo.

By changing a letter by *Metatheſis*, in the middle of a word, of the ſecond perſon plurall of the Imperatiue mode, as D and L changing places, as for Caſtigádle, they write Caſtigalde, for Dezídle, they ſay and write Dezílde.

The Spaniſh ſheweth his original from the Latine, although by corruption many words haue changed letters, as in theſe following & their like, as { a b c e f g } into { e u g i h y } as { *Lac*, milke, Léche. *Caſeus*, cheeſe, Quéſo. *Barba*, a beard, Bárva. *Bibo*, I drinke, Bévo. *Amicus*, a frend, amígo. *Acutus*, ſharp, agúdo. *Directus*, directed, derigído. *lectus*, read, leýdo. *Ferrũ*, iron, hiérro. *facere*, to make or do, hazér *Regnum*, a kingdome, Reyno.

I proceéde no further herein, but leaue euery Latiniſt to conſider of them as he ſhall méete with them by reading, whereby he ſhall manifeſtly perceiue by the multitude of words in this tongue deriued from the Latine, how eaſie it is for euerie meane ſcholler ſpéedily to obtaine the knowledge of the ſame, and with theſe rules and precepts, which here I ſhall ſet downe, I doubt not but that euery one (deſirous thereof) may with facilitie and ſhort time ſpeake it and write it more than meanly: the which the better to performe, I take it the beſt order (according to the ſaying, *Qui bene diuidit bene docet*, He that diuideth the matter, he handleth well, teacheth well) to diuide this preſent Grammar into *Orthographie*, *Proſodie*, *Etymologie*, and *Syntaxis*, of which though I ſhall not deale with all of all that may be ſaid, yet at leaſt that ſhall bee neceſſarie to be ſaide for the inſtruction of the learner in this tongue.

No difficultie in the Spaniſh tongue or other vulgar tongues comming from the Latine.

OF

OF ORTHOGRAPHIE

Of Grammar and hir parts.

Definition of Grammar.

Grammar is an Arte teaching the right rules of true speaking and writing, and it is deriued from the Greeke word γράμμα, which is *litera*, as much as to say *scientia literaria*, a knowledge of letters.

Deuision of Grammar.

Grammar according to *Quintilian*, is two fould: *Historicall*, and *Methodicall*.
Historicall, gotten by imitation of Authors.
Methodicall, is taught by precepts, which onely we heere handle.

Subdiuision of Grammar.

Deuision of Grammar.

Grammar methodicall is deuided into fower parts, *Orthography*, *Prosody*, *Etymology*, & *Syntaxis*.
Orthography, conuersant in letters.
Prosody, in syllables.
Etymologie, in words.
Syntaxis, in sentences.

Propertie of the fower parts of Grammar.

Orthographie, of the Greeke word ὀρθός right, γραφὴ writing.
Prosodia, of πρός, *ad*, & ὠδή, *cantus*, that is *Accentus*.
Etymologia, of ἔτυμος, true, λόγος speech.
Syntaxis, of σύν, *con*, & τάσσω, *ordino*, *quasi*, coordinatio.

Definition of Orthographie.

Orthographie is a right rule of true writing, as before of ὀρθός right, γραφὴ writing, whereby euerie word is to be set downe with his true letters, as Cierto, certaine, not Sierto.

Definition of Orthopœia.

Heereto belongeth *Orthopœia*, which is a right rule of true speaking, of ὀρθός right, & ἔπος word, that in speaking men pronounce not more grosse or smal, then the nature of language will allow, or otherwise then the accustomed maner of pronounciation vsually permitted therein, as Vino, wine, not to pronounce it as Englishmen doe, Veino, but smaller as they pronounce the double ee, Veeno, Dios, God, not Deios, but Dheeos. But of this hereafter in the letters more at large.

And because *Orthographie* (the former part of our Grammar) chiefly consisteth in the true writing of euerie word with his right letters: It must of necessitie follow, that whosoeuer speaketh, or heareth a toong spoken in his proper *Idioma*, and would write downe the same so spoken, that he know the power and propriete of each letter in that toong (because of letters are framed syllables, and of syllables are made words, and of words the whole speech, and language, the which neglected, must needs bring a confusion to the learner, and little or no fruite to the Teachers labour. Therefore to our purpose.

The force of letters.

There are in the Spanish toong 27. letters, whereof 24. are single, and three double.

Letters.

The single, A.b.c.ç.d.e.f.g.h.i.j.k.l.m.n.o.p.q.r.ſ.t.v.x.y.z.

Double letters.

The double are these, ch.ll.ñ.

Nota.

If any aske the question, why the Spanish, being descended from the Latine, hath in it more letters then the Latin: I answere, that although it be now (for the most part of words therin) corrupt & broken Latin, yet it had at the first (as in the Proeme before going) his originall from the *Caldean*, *Arabique*, and *Moores* toong, of which they reserue some * letters.

* ç.g.j.x.z.

But now to our letters as they are in order in the Alphabet or crosse row, without beginning with the vowels, and then skipping from one consonant to another, distracting the memorie of the yoong beginner in a toong, which would much better retaine the precepts giuen thereon, so they might not be driuen to a new order of reckoning their letters, differing from that in their childhood they learned, and now can hardly be drawen from.

A Is sounded plainely, with opening the mouth as in the Latin, French, and Italian, as in English man, can: so in Spanish, Manáda, a flocke. Ensaláda, a salade of herbs.

B Is as the Latin, and is called *litera labialis*, one of the labiall or lip letters, because it cannot be pronounced without ioyning the lips togither. It is pronounced as in English, baker, basket: so in Spanish, Bacia, a bowle, Barro, clay, but in the middest of a word, except the word come of the Latin. The Spaniards vsually confoundeth it with V consonant, and

B and V consonant, written and pronounced one for another.

ſoundeth it as V conſonant, as Trabájo, trauell, they pronounce Travájo: Palábras, words, they ſound Palávras: Cábra, a goate, Cávra: Labór, labour, Lavór: Albárda, a packeſaddle, Alvárda: Alabárda, a holbard, Alavárda: ſo oftentimes in the beginning of a word, as Baylár, to daunce, Vaylár: Baſquiña, a petticoate, a kirtle, Vaſquiña: Bellóta, an acorne, Vellóta: Bermejo, red colour, Vermejo: Bexica, a bladder, Vexica. Wherefore I aduiſe the ſtudious in the Spaniſh tong, if he finde not a word in the Dictionarie, in one of theſe letters, let him turne to the other: as if he finde not Báyo, which is vſed in good Authors for Bay coloured, or Bayard, let him looke Váyo, and there he ſhall finde the ſame: If not Veñar, to bathe, looke Bañár: If not Vóz, looke Búz, a voice.

B caſt away.

B In the middeſt of a word going before another conſonant, and making the pronunciation harder, is cut off in Spaniſh, as Subtil, they write, Sutil, Abſénte, Auſénte, Obſcúro, Oſcúro, or Eſcúro.

C This letter hath two manner of ſoundings according to the vowels that follow it. If a o or u follow it, he is ſounded as k, as in Cára, a face, Cóco, wruell, Cuchára, a ſpoone: ſo likewiſe in the middle of a word, as Deſcánſo, reſt, Eſcória, drоſſe, Eſcudilla, a diſh: but going before e or i pronounce almoſt as the Italian z, as *Prudenza*, *Diſcalzo*, or their v before ia or io, as *Prudentia*, *Iuſtificatione*, Cecina, powdred fleſh, Ciruéla, a plum.

C caſt away.

C Before t, cut off as Acto, an acte: the Spaniard ſaith, A'to, Pacto, a couenant, Páto.

ç pronounced as the Italian z. ç pronounced as Engliſh Thſ.

Ç Marked with a daſh vnder it thus, ç, called ç, Cerilla, or ç Cedilla, is proper to the Arabique tong, from whence it was firſt taken: it is ſounded by putting the tong to the rankes of the teeth, as the French ç, *Vien ça*, or verie nære: the Italian z, as *Diligenza*, *Scienza*. This ç muſt be ſo pronounced, whether it be at the beginning, end, or middle of a word, though a o or u follow: and is ſounded as in Engliſh Thſ, as çaraguelles, great gaſcome or Spaniſh hoſe, çoçóbras, croſſe blows of fortune, çufre, brimſtone: pronounce Thſaraguélles, Thſoſóbras, Thſúfre, in like maner before e and i, as çenogiles, garters, ciénto, a hundred: pronounce Thſenogiles, Thſiénto.

D pronounced as Dh.

D Is pronounced in the beginning of a word, as in Latin, French, and Italian: as in Engliſh, Dagger, Doctor: ſo in Spaniſh, Dága, a dager, Dóze, a dozen: this word Dios is excepted from this rule, and is pronounced as theſe that follow: that is, if d come in the middeſt or end of a word, you muſt pronounce him as ð in Græke, as dh in Engliſh, as Cada, euery, Cádha, fidelidád, fidelitie, fidhelidhadh.

E Is as the Latin, and the Italian, and as in Engliſh, Bend, Lend: ſo in Spaniſh, Bendezir, to bleſſe, Bevér, to drinke: and it muſt neuer be ſounded ſo ſmall as the Engliſh æ, as fœ, wœ: nor ſo broad as the French do their e feminine, as *Femme*, a woman, pronounced Famma, but betwixt both as firſt aboue.

F Is as the Latin and the Italian tongs, and iuſt as the Engliſh. The Spaniard writeth him when the Latins write *Ph*, as *Philoſophus*, in Spaniſh Filóſofo.

Ga. Go, Gu. Gua.

G Anſwerable to the Hebrue *Gimel*, it hath two maner of ſoundings according to the vowels which follow it, if a o or u immediately followe, it is pronounced as in the Latin, *Gabriel*, *Gorgias*, *Gubernator*: Italian, *Galante*, *Gotta*, *Guſtare*: French, *Garçon*, *Gourmand*: as in Engliſh, Gate, Gold, Gutter: ſo in Spaniſh, Gáſo, a lazare, a leapour, Góſo, rude, Gúla, gluttonie.

But if after the u immediately come a, as Guante, a gloue, ſound Gwante: Agua, water, Agwa: Mengua, want, Mengwa.

Gue, Gui, like Ghe, Ghi.

But if after u followe e or i, pronounce as the French *Guerre*, *Guide*: as in Engliſh Gueſt, guide: ſo in Spaniſh Guérra, war, Guia, a guide: ſound Gherra, Ghia, except theſe wordes following, Guéro, adie, Aguéro, ſoothſaying, Garguéro, the throat, Sarguéro, a drawer or tower of a boate with a roape, Hoguéro, a woodpile, Triguéro, a ſparowe that lieth in the wheate, Ciguéna, a ſtorke, Pediguéno, wanton, Halaguéño, flattering, Siguénça, a citie of Spaine, Verguénça, ſhame, Aguélo, a grandfather, Deguéllo, a beheading, Reguéldo, belking, Vnguénto, ointment: and words that come of the Infinitiue mode in Guár, as Enxaguár, to water, Enxágue, Menguár, to want, Mengue.

Ge, Gi, as je, ji, which is as in Engliſh ſhe ſhi.

G Before e or i is ſounded as the Latin *Gero*: Italian, *Giorno*: French, *Giſant*: Engliſh, Geffrey, Giles: or more like the Spaniſh, called j iota, or j conſonant, which is pronounced as ſh in Engliſh: ſo they ſay Gémir, to groane, pronouncing as it were written in Engliſh ſhemir, Gingibre, ginger, ſhinſhibre.

G and j conſonant written one for another.

For the Spaniard maketh no difference in ſpeaking of this G before e and i, from the j conſonant, and they write one for another, as Agéno, Linage, Menſáge, Liſongéro, Mageſtád, or Ajéno, Linaje, Menſáje, Liſonjéro, Majeſtád.

G Before n in the middle of a word loſt, as Ignominia, Inominia, ignominie, Ignorância, Inorância, ignorance.

H This letter is neither vowell nor conſonant, but a note of aſpiration, it is called in the Spaniſh as in the Engliſh Ache, which were more properly in my opinion to be called as

ſome

ſome nations do, Ha, bicauſe it doth ſo impoꝛt in pꝛonouncing as in Engliſh, Harnes, Harnes, Hate, Hang.

This H in the beginning of a woꝛd is pꝛonounced in Spaniſh with moꝛe behemencie and emphaſis, and in the middle oꝛ end of a woꝛde weakely and faintly. *H in beginning of a word.*

In the beginning he muſt be pꝛonounced with moꝛe foꝛce, oꝛ elſe there woulde be no difference found in ſpeaking theſe woꝛdes, and their like, Háca, a nagge: Acá hither: as Ven aca, come hither, Háſta, vntill, and Aſta foꝛ a ſpeare: Háya, a beech tꝛee: A'ya, a nurſe: Húſo, a ſpindle: U'ſo, vſe.

In the middle of a woꝛde not ſo foꝛcible, as Ahechár, pꝛonounce as Aechár, Alholí, Aloli, a barne oꝛ garner. *H in middle of a word.*

This H goeth befoꝛe all the fiue vowels, as Hazér, to make oꝛ doe: Hécho, made oꝛ done: Higado, the liuer: Hollín, the ſwte of a chimney: Húſo, a ſpindle. But it may not in true Spaniſh oꝛthographie be wꝛitten befoꝛe a conſonant, as Criſto, not Chriſto.

Beſides it is loſt after T, as Ortografia, not Orthografia, Teólogo, not Theólogo. *H taken away.*

With P alſo it is loſt, and the P turned into F, as Filóſofo, not Philóſopho, which they muſt obſeꝛue that would wꝛite the Spaniſh tꝛong aꝛight in all that aꝛe like theſe.

Where Ue followeth H, it is pꝛonounced as W, Huérto, an oꝛchard: Huéſſo, a bone: pꝛonounce Wuerto, Wueſſo: oꝛ as if G went befoꝛe thus, Gwerto, Gweſſo, which I take to be moꝛe fit foꝛ the Engliſhmans pꝛonounciation foꝛ theſe and the like woꝛdes. Hue *pronounced as* Wue.

That woꝛde which beginneth with H, ſhall not haue H in the middle, except C goe befoꝛe it, as in Hécho, made, Hechizár, to bewitch and the like.

I There be thꝛee kindes of I in the Spaniſh, that is ſmall i, Gꝛeeke y, and j Iota, oꝛ conſonant. Theſe two i, y, with a veꝛie ſmall ſlender ſounde, as the Fꝛench and Italians doe, which is as the double ee in Engliſh, wee, ſhee, fee, decꝛee, ſo in Spaniſh, Tiráno, a tꝛaitꝛ, Teerano: Vida, life, Veeda, & not as Engliſhmen pꝛonounce Teyráno, veida, which all other nations miſlike in hearing them ſpeaking Latine, ſaying, Propino tibi, they pꝛonounce Propeino tibi, which I would wiſh they woulde but maꝛke, and take notice theꝛeof: foꝛ the Fꝛench, Italian, and Spaniaꝛd, do leaꝛne and aꝛe taught by their Schoolemaſters to pꝛonounce the Latine different fꝛom their owne tꝛong, otheꝛwiſe one nation ſhoulde not vnderſtand another ſpeaking the Latine. But in this tꝛong as in the Italian and Fꝛench, they muſt obſeꝛue except they will fal into the vice of *Iotaciſmus* and be laughed at, and not be vnderſtood by ſtꝛangers when they ſpeake oꝛ ꝛeade. I *three kinds.* *A note for Engliſhmen.*

This ſmall i is vſed in a woꝛde as a vowell by it ſelfe, as Tinta, pncke, and in a diphthong, as Niéro, a nephew. *Small* i.

Y is put in the beginning of a woꝛde befoꝛe a vowell oꝛ conſonant, as yo, ya, yꝛ, and in the ende as Daréys, Podéys. Y.

J iota oꝛ j conſonant, which this tꝛong taketh of the Aꝛabique, is pꝛonounced as in Fꝛench, *Jamais, Deja, Jehan*, in Engliſh like ſh, as Jardín, a gaꝛdin, ſhaꝛdin, Járro, a pot ſharro, ójo, an eie Ocho: Hoja, a leafe, Hoſha: Ovéja, a ſheepe, Oueſha: Abéja, a bee, Abeſha: In Seuill and thꝛeabout, they pꝛonounce it not ſo much in the teeth, but moꝛe in the thꝛoate, as Cſhaꝛdin, Cſharro, Ozho, Hozha, Ovezha, Abezha. J *pronounced like* ſh.

Some authoꝛs in the Spaniſh wꝛite theſe woꝛdes (yet ill) and the like, with H. Hieruſalem, Hieróniмo, which ſhould be thus Jeruſalem, Jerónimo.

K The Spaniaꝛd neuer vſeth this letteꝛ but when it is ꝛequiꝛed of the Gꝛeeke and pꝛoper names then ſounded as in the Engliſh, as Kalendas.

L, M, N, O, P. Aꝛe all pꝛonounced as in the Latine, Fꝛench, Italian, and iuſt as in Engliſh: But P may not be doubled in Spaniſh, as Aprovar, to appꝛoue, Apetito, appetite, and not Approvár, Appetito. P befoꝛe T in the middle of a woꝛde loſt, as Captivo, pꝛonounce Cautivo, captiue. P *not doubled.* P *caſt away.*

Neither can L be doubled in Spaniſh when the woꝛde commeth of the Latine, and keepeth the Latine ſounde, as Ilúſtre, in Latine *Illuſtris*: Silaba, in Latine *Syllaba*: Colégio, *Collegium*. So likewiſe of N, as Tiráno, not Tiránno, in Latine *Tyrannus*, but when theſe keepe not the ſounde of the Latine, loke hꝛeafteꝛ in double Ll, ñ, and theꝛe you ſhall finde howe they aꝛe pꝛonounced. *When* L *not doubled.* *When* N *not doubled.*

Q Hath two pꝛonunciations, not of his owne nature, but by ꝛeaſon of a vowell following him. *Nota.*

If ua follow as in Latine and Engliſh, Quantitie, Quaꝛteꝛ, ſo in Spaniſh Quándo, when, Quaꝛtána, Quál.

But when ue oꝛ ui follow, it is to be pꝛonounced as the Italian *Che, chi*, oꝛ the Fꝛench *Que, Qui*, as Engliſh Ke, Ki, as Queſtión, a Queſtion oꝛ quaꝛꝛell, Keſtion, Quieto, quiet, Kieto, except when the woꝛd is Latine, as Delinquente, Eloquente. Que, Qui *pronounced as* Ke, Ki.

R with

R With the Grœkes and Latins termed *Litera canina*, ſo the Spaniard calleth him Letra perrina, the doggiſh letter, becauſe dogs in grinning their teeth, when they would bite, ſound this letter R. It is pronounced as the Latine, Italian, and French, but if it be in the beginning of a word it is ſounded ſtrongly, as the Grecians doe ſound. The Spanyard ſaith Rayo, a ſun beame, Rey, a king, or if it be doubled in the middeſt of a word you cannot ſound with too great vehemencie, as Barro, Clay, Carro, a Cart. But if it be in the middeſt of a word and ſingle, with a gentle and milde pronunciation, as ara, an altar, Moro, a blacke Moore.

S made like a ſnake doubled with his head lifted vp.

S With x. z. and ç. are pronounced (although the one more plaine and ſounding, and the reſt leſſe) by putting the tongue to the roofe of the mouth, and then hiſſing out the voice with the lips open as a ſnake, and therefore the Grœkes called this letter S by that hiſſing name, as alſo made it in faſhion double as a ſnake, with his head lifted vp, accordingly is it made in Latine, Italian, and Spaniſh. In Spaniſh theſe letters are called Culebrinas, which is ſnakie, of Culébra, a ſnake, which vſeth hiſſing.

This S in the beginning of a word as in Latine, Italian, and French, and as in Engliſh Sand, Sceth, Sun, Sod, Sudden, ſo in Spaniſh Sabér, Sembrár, Sóbra, Sudór.

But if S be ſingle in the middeſt of a word betweene two vowels, then with a gentle ſound almoſt like Z, as the French doe, adding thereby great grace to their tongue, as *Egliſe* a Church, *Cauſe*, ſo in Spaniſh Cauſa, Roſa, uſo, púſo. But if it be doubled, then ſtrongly, as in Engliſh Croſſed, toſſed, ſo in Spaniſh Fuéſſemos gueſſo.

Nota, S neuer in beginning of a word except a vowel follow.

In the end of a word as Z, as Cártas, Letters, Cámaras, Chambers, or going to ſtoole. And note that this letter cannot be in the beginning of a word when a conſonant next followeth. Therefore you muſt write Eſpéro, I hope, and not Spéro. Eſcrivo, I write, and not Scrivo.

Ti neuer turned in Ci in Spaniſh, as in other tongues.

T Is pronounced as in the Latine, Italian, French & Engliſh, except it can neuer ſound *ci*, as the Latins, Italians, French and Engliſh doe when after *t* followeth *i* with a vowell, as in Latine *Prudentia*, Italian *Amicitia*, French *Juſtification*, Engliſh Ambition, in Spaniſh it muſt be written Prudéncia, Amicicia, Juſtificación, Ambición, otherwiſe the writing were falſe, and you ſhould pronounce Ti as in *Tibi*.

Alſo if H follow T, as Theólogo, Theopómpo, write and pronounce Teólogo, Teopómpo.

U pronounced broad as ou.

U Being a vowell not to be pronounced with a ſmall ſound as Engliſh, Strue, Brue, Crue, Iſſue, but as the French doth in his diphthong *ou*, almoſt as the Engliſh ou, as *Tu*, tou, Buche, the maw, *Bouche*. But being a conſonant is pronounced as in other languages in the beginning of a word, as Váca, a Cow, Véna, a Veine, Vino, Wine, Vóto, a Vow, Vúlgo, the common people, in the middes of a word as Avaro, Gávia, úva. Alſo when two u come together, and a vowell following, the ſecond is a conſonant, as úvo, Túve, except Vueſtro.

X pronounced as ſh.
X and j written often in Spaniſh one for another.

X Is one of the Culebrinas létras, the ſnakie or hiſſing letters, as aboue ſaid in the letter S, and is pronounced like J conſonant, and the Spanyard often writeth one for another, as Xaráue, ſirrup, Jaráue, and is pronounced as the French *Ch*, as the Engliſh ſh, as Faxa, a waſtband, Brúxa, a hag, Flóxo, weake, Faſha, Bruſha, Floſho.

Y As aboue in I.

Z Is called in Spaniſh Zéta, as the Hebrew Zain, from whence it is drawen, and from the Moriſh tongue, and is pronounced as the Engliſh Z, as Zángano, a droane, Zélo, zeale, Zodiaco, the Zodiacke, ſo likewiſe in the end of a word, as Bóz, a voice, Crúz, a Croſſe.

Ch as in Engliſh Ch.

Ch Before any of the fiue vowels to be pronounced as in Engliſh, Chapman, Chiefely, Chicken, Chop, Chooſe: ſo in Spaniſh, Chamelóte, Chamlet: Chiminéa, a Chimney: Chórro, a droke: Chúſma, a companie of people of the common ſort.

Ll pronounced as Li.

Ll As gl in Italian, as *Cavagli*, *Moglie*, *Figli*, as double Ll in French, as *Fille*, *Coquille*, as Li in Engliſh, as Lláno, plaine: Lléno, full: Llovér, to raine: Llúvia, raine: pronounce Liáno, Liéno, Liovér, Liuvia: ſo likewiſe in the middle of a worde, as Querrellóſo, Kerrelioſo, quarrelſome: in the end of a worde neuer in Spaniſh written double, as Mil, a thouſande, not Mill.

ñ pronounced as ni.

ñ As the Italian and French gn, *Montagna*, *Campagna*, French *Compaignon*, *Mignon*, in Engliſh as ni: as Montáña, a mountaine, *Montania*, Campáña, *Campania*, ſo Dáño, loſſe, *Dannyo*, Báño, a bath, *Bannyo*.

Of

Of Orthographie in Diphthonges.

A Diphthong (according to the definition of Grammarians) is a ſounding togither of two different vowels, as if they were but one onely, as in English, Ide, Iuditor. *Definition of diphthongs.*

In Spaniſh there are twelue ſorts.

The firſt in ai, or ay, as gaita, andáys, cantáis. But when two vowels come togither and make more then one ſounde, they ſhoulde be marked ouer head with two prickes, to take awaie confuſion, as Caida, pronounced Caída, and ſo the reſt. 1. Ai, ay.

The ſecond in ao, where a is more ſounded then o, as Quartáo, a nag, Saráo, a hall to dance in, Vilbáo, a proper name of a towne, are pronounced in the ſame ſort, as Cats maule. 2. Ao.

The third in au, where a ſounds more then u, as Cáuſa, Autór, Caudillo: except Laúd, a lute, Ataúd, a tombe: La-úd, Ata-úd. 3. Au.

The fourth in ei and ey, where e is more ſounded then i, as Réy, a king, Léy, a law: when they are ſeuered, write them with two pricks thus, Leiſtes, Reir. 4. Ei, ey.

The fift in eu, where e is moſt perceiued, as Féudo, Déudo, Réuma: being diſioyned write thus: Reüntar, Reüngír. 5. Eu.

The ſixt in ia, in which a is more heard ſound then i, as Saia, Vaia, Malícia, Preſéncia: except Mía, Día, Porfía, Deſvía. 6. Ia.

The ſeuenth, ie, ye, where e is moſt heard pronounced, as Viénto, Sciénto, Viéne, Bién, Quién, Quiéra, Arriéndo, Diſpiérto, Apriéto, Pie, Piédra, Tiérra, Ciélo, Infiérno, Diéz, Siéte, Miél, Hiél. 7. Ie, ye.

The eight in io, or yo, where o is moſt ſounded, as Yo, Dió, Vió: except Mío, Río, Frío, Tío. 8. Io, yo.

The ninth in iu, where i is more heard then the u, as Ciudád, a citie. 9. Iu.

The tenth in oi, or oy, as Soy, Doy, Voy, Oygo: except Oýdo, Roýdo. 10. Oi, oy.

The eleuenth in ue, where e more ſounded then u, as Fuérça, Muérte, Fuérte, Cuerno, Nuevo, Fuego, Huélgo, Nuéz, Vihuéla. 11. Ue.

The Twelfe in ui, and uy, where u is more ſounded then the i, as Muy, Fuy, Cuidádo, Húyo. 12. Ui, uy.

Fower Rules following ſhewing how euery vowell maketh a ſeuerall ſyllable by himſelfe, or is ſounded in diphthong with another.

The firſt Rule.

If betweene two vowels come h, or a conſonant, ſuch vowels cannot ioyne themſelues togither to make a ſyllable or diphthong, as Ahínco, Bolár, except Auré, Aurás, Aurá, Auremos, Auréys, where u r and the vowell make a ſyllable, the like in Auría, Auríamos. *The firſt Rule.*

The ſecond Rule.

Any two vowels comming togither, neither of them being i nor u, make two ſyllables, as Neémias, Poſſéer, Roér, except theſe Hebrew words which end in two ee, as Oſeé, Bethleem, Berſabeé. *The ſecond Rule.*

The third Rule.

When the firſt perſon of a verbe doth end in two vowels, and the firſt vowell being i, and the accent ſtand vpon the ſame i, then that i maketh a ſyllable of it ſelfe without ioyning it ſelfe with the vowell following, as Embío, Embías, Embía, Embiámos. Porfío, Porfías, Porfían. Eſpío, Eſpías, Eſpían. Confío, Confías, Confía. *The third Rule.*

The fourth Rule.

But if the word doth end in two vowels, and the firſt of them being i, and the accent not on the firſt, then they make both the vowels a diphthong into a ſyllable, as Grácia, Juſticia, Daniél, Ezechiél, Gabriél, Senténcia, Victória, and in like ſort doe they when they haue the accent on the laſt of them, as Paſſión, Religión, Nación, Caución, Ración, becauſe they come of words of the Latine that haue their accent in the *Antepenultima*, therefore muſt the Spaniſh haue it in the *Vltima*. Except theſe words in Spaniſh, Anciáno, Dioceſiáno, Diáblo. *The fourth Rule.*

Of Triphthongs.

A Triphthong is a ſounding of three vowels into one ſyllable with one breath togither, and that after fiue ſortes. *Definition of a Triphthongs.*

The firſt in iai or yay, as Vayáys, Eſpaciáys, where a is heard more then i. 1. iay, yay.

The ſecond iey or yey, where e is more ſounded then i, as Enſuziéys. 2. iey, yey.

The third in iue or yue, where e is heard more then u, as Hoyuélo, Arroyuélo. 3. iue, yue.

The fourth in uai or uay, as Guáy. 4. uai, uay.

The fifth in uéi or uey, as Buéy, Buéytre. 5. uei, uey.

Of

Of Proſodia or Accents, the ſeconde part of this Grammar.

AS Orthographie handleth letters, ſo Proſodie treateth of ſyllables, and the right ſounding and pronouncing the ſame with their true accents, which is to make the ſyllable or worde long or ſhort, ſoft or ſharpe, without the which the learner can not tell how to read or pronounce the tong, much leſſe to be vnderſtood when he ſpeaketh the ſame, whereby he ſhall be not onely diſgraced, but be driuen to beſtow longer time, in forgetting that ill touch taken vp, then he might bee in going forward in learning fiue times ſo much. The which being carefully loked vnto at the firſt, cannot but much adorne the ſpeaker, make himſelfe vnderſtood, as alſo giuing himſelfe exceeding comfort in going forward, when he knoweth hee ſingeth true harmonie, which cannot but delight thoſe that will liſten thereto.

Deſcription of Proſodia.

Proſodia, is a rule or knowledge, ſhewing with what accent euery ſyllable of a worde is to be pronounced, as Cárcel, not Carcél a priſon.

Spaniſh not ſubiect to Latine accents.

Many haue affirmed the Spaniſh tong to be ſubiect to the Latine accents, ſeeing it is for the moſt parte deriued from the ſame, but common ſpeech and vſe ſhewe the contrarie in manie words, as Latin *Géneſis*, in Spaniſh Geneſis, *Sódoma*, in Spaniſh Sodóma, *Hélena*, Heléna, ſo in Latine *ámor*, in Spaniſh amór, *autor*, autór, *Cérasus*, Cerézo. But yet note this, that words deriued of the Latine do keepe the accent of the Latine, except ſome proper names or words ending in d, l, n, or r, as *Abſtinéntia*, Abſtinéncia, *Obediéntia*, Obediéncia, Beneficio, Blándo, Cadúco, Ceremónia, Culpa, Digno, Dóte, Familia, Fecóndo, Furióſo, Prémio.

Of the Latine, the Latine accent.

Words ending in D, l, N, or R, accented in the laſt ſillable.

But if they end in d, l, n, or r, then they haue alwaies the accent in the laſt ſyllable, as Amiſtád, Peſtilenciál, Camelón, Paſtór.

Except theſe.

Except ſome few ending in l, n, or r, ángel, ábil, apóſtol, árbol, jóven, lóor, ánſar, ámbar, acíbar, açúcar, açófar, alcáçar, nácar, tíbar, cármen, cáncer, carácter, cárcel, Criſtóval, cónſul, crímen, débil, deficil, móbil, Immóbil, fócil, dócil, Eſtéril, eſtiércol, fácil, Dátil, frágil, v'til, inv'til, fértil, inábil, máſtil, márgen, mártir, mármol, Tróbol, órden, orígen, vírgen, exámen, volúmen, imágen, betúmen, Eſtévan, and verie fewe or none beſides theſe, for that in ſetting theſe downe I ran ouer (as neere as I coulde) euery word in the whole Dictionarie, whereby you may coniecture, what paines, trouble, & time, ſuch bookes of ſuch method as this haue beſtowed on them, before they can come forth to ſhew to the learner in a moment, that which the compoſer can hardly finde out in a moneth: but if any other there be, I haue accented them in their places, as all the words generally in the whole Dictionarie whatſoeuer to make the beginner, and alſo the well read to bee perfect in the pronunciacion, without which he ſhall be derided, as not vnderſtode when hee readeth or ſpeaketh.

Nota.

All Nounes in ion, and in or, accent in the laſt ſillable, as Occaſión, Predicadór, ſo alſo in i, s, z, as Alcaucí, Cortés, Pertináz, Cervíz, except Adives, a beaſt in Barbarie like a foxe, which barketh and crieth in the night as loud as a foxe.

Opus laboris.

2 Accents in one worde.

Although in the Latine there is in no worde but one accent dominant, yet in the Spaniſh often are two found, as Ciértaménte, Fuértaménte, wherefore I will ſet downe the order of the Spaniſh accenting, firſt giuing example of thoſe words which continually are accented, then of thoſe which are ſomtimes, and ſomtimes not; laſt of al, thoſe which haue two or three accents.

Theſe words alwaies accented, as

Hé há
ýd ýr
aquí acá
ſéd ſóy
cál bóz
grán áy
Auguſtín acullá.

Theſe words following ſometime accented, ſometime not, as

Al, If it be an article, it is not accented, as Dezíd al Señór ésto, Tell your maſter this. But if it be not an article, it is then accented, as Penſád en ál, Thinke on ſome thing.

Aun, When que followeth it is not accented, as Pédro aunque ſépa morír no hará, Peter although he knew he ſhould die, he would not doe it. But aſking a queſtion it is then accented, as Aún duérmes Pedro? Doe you ſleepe yet Peter?

Ante, Being a Prepoſition is not accented, as Ante Dios eſtámos, we ſtand before God. But being an Aduerbe it is accented, as Anté víno Pédro que Juán, Peter came before John.

Cerca,

Cerca, a Prepoſition not accented, as Cerca tódos dád buén exémplo, I boue all giue good example. But if it be a Verbe, Aduerbe, or Noune or this particle De going before or following, then it is accented, as El Rey cérca con ſu génte, que tiéne, cerca de ſi, la ciudád y la rodéa cérca tóda, y tiéne la cérca de piédra, y de cérca paréce fuérte. The king doth beſiege with his people, which he hath about him, the citie, and compaſſeth it all about, neere vnto it, which hath his wall of ſtone, and neere hand it ſeemeth ſtrong. Nota.

De mi, A poſſeſſiue not accented, as De mi pádre heredé virtúd, Of my father I inherited vertue. But if it be not a poſſeſſiue it is accented, as De mi hablays ſegun véo, You ſpeake of me as I perceiue.

Del, The article not accented, as Del virtuóſo es la virtúd amáda, Vertue is beloued of the honeſt. But if it be a Pronoune it is accented, as Dios és buéno y dél nos viéne el bién, God is good, and from him commeth goodnes.

Do, Spoken indefinitely not accented, as Do eſtuviére el buéno eſtaré yo, Where the good man ſhall be, there will I be alſo. But ſpoken in asking a queſtion it is accented, as Dónde eſtá Juán? Where is John?

El, Being an Article not accented, as El buéno téme a Dios, The iuſt feareth God. If it be a Pronoune then accented, as Criſto nos ama y él nos redimió, Chriſt loueth vs, and he it is that hath redeemed vs.

Entre, A Prepoſition not accented, as Entre los ſántos deſſéo eſtár, I deſire to be among the godly. But being a Verbe is accented, as Entré Pédro y no Juán, Let Peter enter and not John.

Mas, The Coniunction not accented, as No hagáis mal, mas hazéd bien, Doe not euill but doe good. But being an Aduerbe, then it is, as Más quéto bive, &c. y es más querido, He liueth more at quiet, &c. and is better beloued.

Medio, In compoſition not accented, as Medio en burlas, medio en véras, Halfe in ieſt, halfe in earneſt. If alone, then otherwiſe, as Tenéd el médio en colas, Keepe a meane in matters.

Nos, Not accented, as Hábla nos Jeſus, Chriſt telleth vs. But if it be a nominatiue caſe to the verbe, then it is, as Nós querémos, We will, &c.

Vn, Not accented, as Vn hómbre, A man. But if y the Coniunction goe before, then it is, as Di le pán, y ún reál, I gaue him bread and ſixe pence.

These words following not accented, as

Alo, Alos, Aunque, Con, De, Dela, Delo, Delas, Delos, De mis, Deſde, Deſque, Don, Doña, E, En, En mis, Enlo, Enlos, Enla, Enlas, Fray, Y, Lo, Le, Me, Micer, Moſſen, as Micer ſancho, y Moſſen Pedro viénen, Maſter Sanches and Maſter Peter comes. Ni, Os, Pero, Pues, Por, Quan, Quel, San, Si, Su, So, Tan, Tal. Alſo all the Articles while they keepe the nature of Articles, which are theſe,

A, al, ala, alo, alas, alos,
Del, dela, delo, delos, delas,
El, la, las, Lo, los, le, les.

Words of two Accents.

Altraménte, Hártobásta, Buénaménte, Biénditaménte, Ciértaménte, Bienaventuradaménte, Diéſtraménte, Gráveménte, Graſióſaménte, Yguálménte, Júntaménte, Luéngaménte, Magnificaménte, Razonáblemente, Ráraménte, Sábiaménte. *Words of two Accents.*

Words of three Accents.

Múy málaménte, Múy buénaménte. *Words of three Accents.*

Of

Of Etymologie and the Nowne.

Definition of Etymologie.

Etymologie, is a Rule of shewing and searching out the originall of words, with that pertaineth to them.

This searching out of originall and descendence of words is considered in diuers manners: but among the rest, for the beginners in any language whatsoeuer, this is so necessarie, that without it, they could not vnderstand or learne it: The which by the Latine Grammarians hath beene, and is called Declension and Coniugation (which is likewise a declination) but that the former is of the Nownes, and the other of the Verbes.

The Spaniish hath eight parts of Speech, as the Latin.

Nowne,	declined.	Aduerbe,	vndeclined.
Pronowne,		Conunction,	
Verbe,		Prepoſition,	
Participle.		Interiection.	

Of the Nowne.

Nownes be deuided into Substantiues and Adiectiues, which are likewise deuided into Primitiues, Deriuatiues.

Primitiue.
Deriuatiue.

The Primitiue, which is not deriued of any other, but is *Primũ*, of himself, as Abéja, a bee.

The Deriuatiue, is drawen from the Primitiue, as Abejonázo, a great Bee.

And of like nature to these Primitiue nownes, are these Interrogatiues, Redditiues, and Numerals following.

To the Primitiue, these following, and the like are subiect, as

Interrogatiue.

The Interrogatiue, as Quién? who? Quál? what manner? Quánto? how much? Quántos? how many.

The Relatiue which answereth to the Interrogatiue, as tal, such a one, Tantos, so many.

Numerall.

The Numerall to which these kinds following do belong, as

Cardinall.

Cardinal, from which as from a fountaine the rest do spring, these do I wish the learner to haue by hart.

Cardinall Numerals.

1	vno	21	veinte úno	1500	míl y quiniéntos
2	dos	22	veynte dos, &c.	2000	dos mil
3	tres	30	tréynta	3000	tres mil
4	quátro	40	quarénta	4000	quátro mil
5	cinco	50	cinquénta	5000	cinco mil
6	seys	60	sesénta	6000	seys mil
7	siéte	70	seténta	7000	siéte mil
8	ócho	80	ochénta	8000	ócho mil
9	nuéve	90	novénta	9000	nuéve mil
10	diéz	100	cién, or ciénto	10000	diéz mil
11	ónze	101	ciénto y vno	100000	cién míl
12	dóze	200	dociéntos y doziéntos	1000000	millón
13	tréze	300	treziéntos	2000000	dos millónes
14	catórze	400	quatrociéntos	3000000	tres millones
15	quinze	500	quiniéntos		
16	diés y séys	600	seyscíentos		
17	diéz y siéte	700	sieteciéntos		
18	diéz y ócho	800	ochociéntos		
19	diez y nuéve	900	nuéve ciéntos		
20	véynte	1000	mil		

Ordinall Numerals.

The ordinals, which declare the order of a place or time, as Primero, segúndo, tercéro, cuárto, quinto, séxto, séptimo, or seteno, octávo, nóno, or novéno, décimo, or dezéno, onzéno, dozéno, trezéno, catorzéno, quinzéno, décimo séxto, décimo séptimo, décimo octávo, décimo nóno, veinténo, veinténo úno, veinténo dós, &c. Treinténo, quarenténo, cinquenténo, sesenténo, setenténo, ochenténo, noventéno, centésimo, or cienténo, dosienténos, trezenténos, quatrocienténos, quinienténos, seyscienténos, setecienténos, ochocienténos, nuevecienténos, miléssimo.

Partatiues

Partatiues which ſignifie many ſeuerally, as Cáda vno, euery one, Entrámbos, both of them, ni vno, ni ótro, neither of them, or one among many, as ótro, another, algúno ſome body. *Partatiue numerals.*

Vniuerſals, as tódos, all: ningúno, no bodie. *Vniuerſall numerals.*

Particulars, as Algúno, ſome bodie. *Particular numerals.*

Aduerbials, ioyning the Cardinall Numerals with this Aduerbe vez, as vna vez, once: dos vézes, twiſe: tres vezes, thriſe: diez vézes, ten times: cien vezes, a hundred times: mil vézes, a thouſand times. *Aduerbiall numerals.*

Deriuatiues.

Deriuatiues, which haue contained vnder them theſe following, viz. *Deriuatiues.*

Of countries or townes, as Aragonéz, a man of Aragon: Andalúz, a man of Andaluzia: Granadíno, a man of the citie or countrie of Granada: Gadiráno, a man of Cadis or Caliz. *Of countries or townes.*

Of the nation, as Dalmácios, people of Dalmatia: Ingleſes Engliſhmen, or people of England: Eſcoſſéſes, Scottiſhmen: Francéces, Frenchmen: Móros, blacke Mores: Túrcos, Turkes. *Of the nation.*

Words in óſo are deriuatiue of their Primitiues, as Mentiróſo, lying, of Mentira, a lie: Clamoróſo, clamorous, of Clamór, clamor: glorióſo, &c. *Deriuatiues from Primitiues.*

Of ſignifying exceſſe in údo, and ázo, as Barudo, hauing a great long beard, of Barba, jarrázo, a great blowe with a cup, of jarro a cup: Papúdo, hauing a great wide throate, of Papo a throate: Rodillázo, a great blowe with the knee, of Rodilla a knee. *Exceſſiues in údo, & ázo.*

Deminutiues in ico, ito, éta, uéla, illa, illo, as Bonico, Bonito, prettie, good: vaquéta, vaquilla, a little cowe or heifer, of Váca a cowe: Ropilla a little gowne or caſſocke, of Ropa: Calderuéla, a little kettle, of Calderón a kettle: Cardenillo, ſomwhat blacke and blew, of Cardéno blacke and blewe. *Deminutiues.*

Of Numbers.

To Nounes as well Subſtantiues as Adiectiues, there are theſe affections following belonging, Number, Caſe, Gender.

The Number ſheweth the quantitie, the Caſe the qualitie, and the Gender the ſexe.

There are two Numbers. The Singular and the Plurall. *Numbers.*

The Singular ſpeaking of one, as Libro, a booke.

The Plurall of moe, as Libros, bookes.

This is a generall Rule, if the ſingular number doe end in a vowell, the plurall number is made by putting to s, as Palábra, palábras, Cuérpo, cuérpos, Muérte, muértes, Javali, javalis. *Nota.*

Except ſome few, which muſt haue es added to them, as Rey, réyes, Léy, léyes, Fe, fées, Buéy, buéyes, ſo in this manner all nounes ending in conſonants muſt haue es added to them, as Mercéd, mercédes, Ciudád, ciudádes, Mortál, mortáles, Paſtór, paſtóres, &c.

Of Caſes.

The Spaniſh hath Caſes as the Latine, but all in one ending or termination, and are declined with an article, as the Nominatiue with el la, the Genitiue with the Prepoſition De, as the Italian and French, the Datiue Para, the Accuſatiue a, the Ablatiue as the Genitiue de. *Caſes.*

Of Genders.

There are three, { The Maſculine, as El Pádre, the father. / The Feminine, as La Mádre, the mother. / The Neuter, which is of ſmall vſe with the Spanyard, as Lo ſincéro, Lo malo, for they ſpeake by the ſubſtantiue, as La Sinceridad, El mal. } *Genders.*

Rules to know the gender of moſt part of Nounes.

To knowe the Genders, obſerue well theſe Rules following. *Nota.*

All nounes ending in l, o, or r, are commonly of the Maſculine gender, as Cardinál, a Cardinall, Cárdo, a Thiſtle. Paſtór, a Shepherd. Except la Cárcel, a priſon, la Piél, the ſkin, la Canál, a Gutter, la Equinoctiál, the Equinoctiall, la Naual, a battell at ſea, la Hiél, gall, la Sal, Salt, la Máno, a hand. *Nounes in l, o, r, Maſculine. Exception.*

All Nounes for the moſt part in a, d, or ion, are of the Feminine gender, as Mantéca, Butter, Mageſtád, Maieſtie, Deliberación, Deliberation. *Nounes in a, d, ion, feminine.*

Names of trees commonly the Masculine gender, and the fruits the feminine, as

El Perál, a Peare tree.	La Péra, the Peare.
El Ciruélo, a Plum tree.	La Ciruéla, the Plum.
El Narránjo, an Orange tree.	La Narránja, the Orange.
El Cidro, the Citron tree.	La Cidra, the Citron fruit.
El Mançáno, the Apple tree.	La Mançána, the Apple.
El Camuéso, the Pippen tree.	La Camuésa, the Pippen.
El Cerézo, the Cherrie tree.	La Ceréza, the Cherrie.
El Alméndro, the Almond tree.	La Alméndra, the Almond.
El Avellano, the Hazell nut tree.	La Avellána, the Hazell nut.
El Caſtáño, the Cheſtnut tree.	La Caſtáña, the Cheſtnut.
El Nogál, the Wallnut tree.	La Nuez, the Wall nut.
El Azeytúno, the Olive tree.	La Azeytúna, the Olive.
El Olivo, idem.	La Oliva, idem.
El Morál, the Mulbery tree.	La Móra, the Mulberie fruit.
El Granádo, the Pomgranat tree.	La Granáda, the Pomgranate.

Exception. Except theſe whoſe tree and fruite are both Maſculine, as

- El Menbrillo, the Quince tree and Quince fruite.
- El Limon, the Limon tree and fruite.
- El Alvérchigo, the Apricocke tree and fruite.
- El Avercóque, idem.
- El Péro, the tree and fruite of a kinde of Apple, very rawe, and cold by nature, good to rolle, red on one ſide.

Another exception. Except theſe alſo whoſe fruit is the Maſculine & tree the Feminine, as

El Higo, the Fig.	La Higuéra, the Fig tree.
El Dátil, the Date.	La Pálma, the Date tree or Palme tree.
El Razimo, the bunch of grapes.	La Parra, the Vine, or La vid.

Verbals in or *make themſelues feminine, by putting to* a. Verbals in or are of the maſculine gender, and make themſelues feminine, by putting to a, as Habladór, a prater, Habladóra, a ſhe prater.

Likewiſe Nownes in o, make their feminine, by changing o into a, as Honrádo, honored, Honráda: Suégro, a father in law, Suégra, a mother in law.

Of Declenſions and of the Article.

Declenſion of the Article. The Spaniſh (as likewiſe the Italian and French) haue but one manner of Declenſion or deciming, that is with the Article, which in Spaniſh is thus declined:

Article maſculine Sing.	Nom. el.	Plu.	Nom. los.	
	Gen. del, de lo.		Gen. de los.	
	Dat. Para el, Para lo.		Dat. para los.	
	Acc. a el, al, alo.		Acc. alos.	
	Ab. del, delo.		Ab. delos.	

The Feminine Article thus.

Article feminine Sing.	Nom. la.	Plu.	Nom. las.	
	Gen. de la.		Gen. de las.	
	Dat. para la.		Dat. para las.	
	Acc. al, ala.		Acc. a las.	
	Abl. de la.		Abl. de las.	

In the Spaniſh (as Italian and French) the Article Maſculine is put oftentimes in ſtæde of the Feminine, when the word beginneth with a vowell, as el agua, the water, el alma, the ſoule: to make the pronunciation more ſweete *Euphoniæ gratia*, and it may alſo be put la agua, la alma.

Nota. Alſo in the Spaniſh (as Italian and French) the Article is neuer ſeparated from Nownes Appellatiues, neither in Singular nor Plurall number: as Spaniſh, el libro, los libros, la cámara, a chamber, las cámaras. But in Nownes proper it is not vſed ſo: for it were abſurd to ſay, el Franciſco, la Iuána: neither is it vſed with this word Dios, except there be ioyned with it ſome *Epitheton*, as el Dios todo poderóſo, God almightie.

Declining

Declining of a Nowne.

All nownes are thus declined, Sing.
Nom. el maéſtro.
Gen. del maéſtro.
Dat. para el maéſtro.
Acc. a el, oꝛ al maéſtro.
Abl. del maéſtro.
Plu.
Nom. los maéſtros.
Gen. de los maéſtros.
Dat. para los maéſtros.
Acc. a los maéſtros.
Abl. de los maéſtros.

The femine gender thus, Sing.
Nom. la doctrína.
Gen. de la doctrína.
Dat. para la doctrína.
Acc. a la doctrína.
Abl. de la doctrína.
Plu.
Nom. las doctrínas.
Gen. de las doctrínas.
Dat. para las doctrínas.
Acc. a las doctrínas.
Abl. de las doctrínas.

Adiectiues are declined like the Substantiues both singular and plurall number.

Comparatiues and Superlatiues.

The Spanish to make comparison, in the Comparatiue degree vseth this particle Mas, as Mas diligénte, moze diligent, Mas vil, moze vile: and to diminish, they vse Ménos, as Ménos diligénte, lesse diligent, Ménos vil, lesse vile. *Comparatiues.*

The Superlatiue.

The Superlatiue is made of this particle Muy, as Muy iusto, verie iust: sometime with exaggerating & magnifying a matter, they foꝛme their Superlatiues from nownes Adiectiues, as Illustrissimo, Humanissimo, Hermosissima, most excellent, most humaine, most beautifull. *Superlatiues.*

These following thus compared
Buéno, mejóꝛ, oꝛ mas buéno.
Malo, peóꝛ, muy málo.
Gránde, mayóꝛ, muy gránde, oꝛ Grandissimo.
Chico, menóꝛ, oꝛ mas chico, muy chico.
Mucho, mas, muy mucho, oꝛ muchissimo.
Poco, ménos, muy poco.

There be also Aduerbes of qualitie which are vsed with Comparatiue & Superlatiue, as nownes whereof they come, as Muy mas elegantaménte, much moze eloquently, Muy mas discretaménte, much moze discreetly. In like manner, Prepositions, as Detrás, behinde, mas Detrás, moze behinde, muy Detras, much behinde: Debáxo, beneath oꝛ vnder, mas Debáxo, moze below oꝛ vnder, muy Debáxo, much vnder oꝛ beneath.

A Pronoune.

The Spanish Pronoune is as the Latine, like a Noune, and is vsed in rehearsing, of a proper name of Pro and Nomen, i. foꝛ the name and in speech is vsed therefoꝛe.

Pronounes are deuided into { Primitiues and Deriuatiues.

The Primitiues are these, yo, tu, si, éste, aquéste, el, ésse, aquél, el qual, que, quien, mismo, to which Mismo all before going may be coupled, as yo mismo, I my selfe: tu mismo, thou thy selfe: si mismo, himselfe: el mismo, he himselfe, and so may you say yo misma, tu misma, &c. they are called Primitiues bicause they are Primi, first, and not deriued of others. *Primitiues.*

Primitiues deuided into { Demonstratiues. Relatiues.

They are called Demonstratiues bicause they shewe a thing not spoken of before, as yo, tu, si, aquel, este, el. *Demonstratiues.*

Relatiues as repeating oꝛ hauing relation to some thing spoken before, as el, este, que, quien, el qual. *Relatiues.*

Deriuatiues oꝛ Possessiues, because they be deriued of the Primitiues and signifie possession, as belonging to some thing, as mio, oꝛ mi: tuyo, oꝛ tu: suyo oꝛ su, nuéstro, vuéstro. *Deriuatiues.*

In Pronounes are chiefely to be noted, the Persons, bicause all Nounes and Particiꝑ 2 pies

ples be of the thirde Perſon, but Pronounes of all three Perſons, as yo and his Plurall nos, be of the firſt Perſon, Tu and his Plurall vos, of the ſecond: and all the reſt whatſoeuer of the thirde Perſon, according to this rule. All Nounes, Pronounes, and Participles, be of the third Perſon, except yo and tu.

The firſt perſon Yo, *thus declined.*

Yo *declined.*

Sing.	Nom. yo.	Plu.	Nom. nos, noſótros.	Fem. Plu.	Noſótras.
	Gen. de mi.		Gen. de nos, de noſótros.		de noſótras.
	Dat. Para mi.		Dat. Para nos, para noſótros.		Para noſótras.
	Accu. a mi, a me.		Accu. a nos, a noſótros.		a noſótras.
	Abla. de mi.		Abla. de nos, de noſótros.		de noſótra.

Nota. This Pronoune in the ſingular number ſerueth as well for the Maſculine as Feminine gender, ſo in the Plurall doth Nos. But Noſótros onely to the Maſculine, and Noſótras to the Feminine.

The Spaniard in ſpeech & writing vſeth this Pronoune Nos with the firſt perſon Plurall of the Imperatiue mode, by taking away s, from the Verbe, as Vámonos, for Vámos Nos, let vs go: Dexámonos, for Dexámos Nos, let vs leaue.

From this Pronoune Primitiue are two other derined, one from the Singular number, as Mio, from yo, another from the Plurall Number as Nueſtro from Noſótros.

Mi, and Mio. Mio, Mia, in Latine *Meus, mea, meum*, in Italian *Mio, mia*, in French *Mon, ma*.

Example.

	Maſcul.	Fem.		Maſcul,	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. Mi, mio.	Mia.	Plu.	Nom. Mis, mios.	Mias.
	Gen. de mi, de mio.	de mia.		Gen. de mis, de mios.	de mias.
	Dat. Para mi, para mio,	para mia.		Dat. para mis, para mios.	para mias.
	Accu. a mi, a mio.	a mia.		Accu. a mis, a mios.	a mias.
	Abla. de mi, de mio.	de mia.		Abla. de mis, de mios.	de mias.

The learner in the Spaniſh muſt note, the manner how the Spaniard vſeth theſe Poſſeſſiues, Mi, mio, Tu, tuyo, Su, ſuyo: and when he ought to vſe them in ſpeech or writing, otherwiſe straight he will bewray himſelfe in vſing vnproperly the tong.

A rule when Mi, tu, ſu, *and* Mio, tuyo, ſuyo, *are to be vſed.* Mi, tu, ſu, are ſtill vſed, ioyned with another worde, as Mi cavállo, my horſe, not Mio cavallo: Tu pienſamento, thy thought, not Tuyo pienſamento: Su provécho, his profite, not Suyo Provécho.

Nota. But when a queſtion is aſked, and Mio, Tuyo, Suyo, put abſolutely and not ioyned, as Cuya es eſſa eſpáda? whoſe rapier is this? Anſwere: Mia, tuya, ſuya, mine, thine, his: and not Mi, tu, ſu: De quien es eſte cuchillo? whoſe knife is this? Anſwere, Mio, tuyo, ſuyo: and not, Mi, tu, ſu. In like ſorte when they make a relation of a thing ſpoken of before, and are placed at the end of a ſentence, clauſe or period, as eſte cavallo no es mio, mas de aquél que a mi lo dexó, paraque yo fuéſſe a vna caſa tuya: this horſe is not mine but his that left it me, that I ſhould ride to one of thy houſes, and you cannot ſay, éſte cávallo es mi, que yo fueſſe a vna caſa tu.

These and many ſuch like I wiſh the learner in the Spaniſh to marke diligently in authors as he reades.

S added maketh Plurall number. To make the Plural number of Mi, Tu, Su, adde to s, as Mis, Tus, Sus, and ſo of other words whatſoeuer, as before of numbers in the Noune.

This other derined from the Plurall Noſótros is thus declined.

	Maſcul.	Fem.		Maſcul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. Nuéſtro,	Nuéſtra.	Plur.	Nom. Nuéſtros,	Nuéſtras.
	Gen. de Nuéſtro,	de Nuéſtra.		Gen. de Nuéſtros,	de Nuéſtras.
	Dat. para Nuéſtro,	para Nuéſtra.		Dat. para Nuéſtros,	para Nuéſtras.
	Accuſ. a Nuéſtro,	a Nuéſtra.		Accuſ. a Nuéſtros,	a Nuéſtras.
	Ablat. de Nuéſtro,	de Nuéſtra.		Ablat. de Nueſtros,	de Nuéſtras.

The ſecond perſon Tú, *thus declined.*

Second perſon, Tu.

		Maſcul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. Tu,	Plur. Nom. Vos	Voſótros, Voſótras.
	Gen. de Ti,	Gen. de Vos	de Voſótros, de Voſótras.
	Dat. para Ti,	Dat. para Vos	para Voſótros, para Voſótras.
	Accu. a Ti, a Te,	Accuſ. a Vos	a Voſótros, a Voſótras.
	Abl. de Te,	Ablat. de Vos	de Voſótros, de Voſótras.

Nota. Note that the Spanyard moſt ordinarily ioyneth to the Infinitiue mode of any verbe, this particle os, which is as much as vos, as Habláros, to ſpeake vnto you, Véros, to ſee you, Deziros, to tell you.

Of

Of this Primitiue, likewise come two Deriuatiues, the one of the Singular number, as of Tu comes Tuyo, in Latin *Tuus, Tua, Tuum*, Italian *Tuo, Tua*, French *Ton, Ta*. The other of the Plurall, Vos or Volótros comes Vuéstro.

Example.

		Mascul.	Fem.			Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom.	Tu,	Túyo,	Túya.	Plur. Nom.	Tus,	Túyos,	Túyas.
	Gen.	de Tu,	de Túyo,	Túya.	Gen.	de Tus,	de Túyos,	Túyas.
	Dat.	para Tu,	para Túyo,	Túya.	Dat.	para Tus,	para Túyos,	Túyas.
	Accus.	a Tu,	a Túyo,	Túya.	Accus.	a Tus,	a Túyos,	Túyas.
	Abl.	de Tu,	de Túyo,	de Túya.	Ablat.	de Tus,	de Túyos,	de Túyas.

Nota, how the Spaniard vseth Tu, *and the second Plu.*

But note how the Spanyard and Italian accounteth it a disgrace to speake to any man in the second person singular either in the Nominatiue Tu, or in other cases Ti or Te, except it be to his Meager, his slaue, his lackie, horsekeeper, or to some of base & vile account. To their seruants of the better reckoning, and to artificers and such like persons they speake in the seconde person Plurall, as Traéd aqui, bring hither, &c. Yréys a mi çapatéro, you shal goe to my shoomaker, Direys que me haga unos borzeguís, and you shall tell him that he make me a paire of buskins.

To all others they vse the third person, as Quiere V.M. andár, Will your Mastership go? *Nota.*
Ruéga a V.M. que me haga essa merced, &c. I intreat your Mastership that you doe me this curtesie, &c.

And whereas Englishmen say You, the French *Vous*, the Spanyard and the Italian speaketh in the third person singular, as V.M. V.S. your Mastership, or Worship. *Nota.*

The other Deriuatiue of the plurall number is this, Vuéstro, of Vos or Volótros, in Latine *Vester, Vestra, Vestrum*, in Italian *Vostro, Vostra*, French *Vostre*, in English Yours. *Nota.*

Example. Vuéstro.

Sing.	Nom.	Vuéstro,	Vuéstra.	Plural.	Nom.	Vuéstros,	Vuéstras.
	Gen.	de Vuéstro,	Vuéstra.		Gen.	de Vuéstros,	Vuéstras.
	Dat.	para Vuéstro,	Vuéstra.		Dat.	para Vuéstros,	Vuéstras.
	Accus.	a Vuéstro,	Vuéstra.		Accus.	a Vuéstros,	Vuéstras.
	Ablat.	de Vuéstro,	Vuéstra.		Ablat.	de Vuéstros,	Vuéstras.

The third person Si, *thus declined.* Si.

Sing. and Plural. Nom. caret. Gen. de si, Dat. para si. Accu. a si. Abl. de si.

Of this Primitiue one Deriuatiue, which signifieth in Latin, *Suus, sua, suum*: Italian, *Suo, sua*: French, Sien, sienne: English, His, as.

Example. Su, Súyo.

		Mascul.	Fem.			Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom.	su,	Súyo,	Súya.	Plu. Nom.	sus,	Súyos,	Súyas.
	Gen.	de su,	Súyo,	Súya.	Gen.	de sus,	Súyos,	Súyas.
	Dat.	para su,	Súyo,	Súya.	Dat.	para sus,	Súyos,	Súyas.
	Accu.	a su,	Súyo,	Súya.	Accus.	a sus,	Súyos,	Súyas.
	Abl.	de su,	Súyo,	Súya.	Abl.	de sus,	Súyos,	Súyas.

I proceed with the examples of all the Pronounes following by declining them, because as I before saide: it is one of the difficultest things in the tong to haue the true vse of them, and whereby a stranger or the vnlearned in his speech or writing, shall soonest discouer himselfe to the naturall or learned in the tong. Wherefore let not onely the yong learner; but also the well grounded, and those that are able to discourse and write the tong well, obserue how and when these Pronounes following (so little differing the one from the other) are to be vsed in their due time and place, as followeth: *Nota the difference of these Pronounes following.*

These two, Este and Aquéste, doe signifie vnto vs any thing that is neere vs, in that signification as the Latin, *Hic, haec, hoc*: in Italian, *Cotesto, Cotesta, Costuy, Costei, Questo, Questa*: in French, *Cestuy cy, Ceste cy, Cecy*: in English, this heere, or this man heere. They do differ thus. Este, Aquéste.

Nota.
Este and Aquéste, in Latin, *Hic*, is he, or that which is neere or next to me. Este, Aquéste.
Esse, in Latin, *Iste*, he or that, neere or next to thee. Esse.
Aquél and El, in Latin, *Ille*, is he, or that which is neither by me nor thee, but a part from vs both. Aquél, El.

Example.

Este.

	Masc.	Fem.	Neu.		Masc.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. éste,	ésta,	ésto.	Plu.	Nom. éstos,	éstas.
	Gen. déste,	ésta,	désto.		Gen. éstos,	déstas.
	Dat. para éste,	para ésta,	para ésto.		Dat. para éstos,	para éstas.
	Accus. a éste,	a ésta,	a ésto.		Accus. a éstos,	a éstas.
	Abl. déste,	ésta,	désto.		Abl. éstos,	déstas.

In the ſingular number of this Pronoune, the firſt wordes in e, as éste, déste, para éste, &c are of the Maſculine gender: the ſecond, ésta, désta, para ésta, &c. of the Feminine: the third, as ésto, désto, &c. of the Neuter: but in the Plurall, the firſt is the Maſculine & Neuter: the other the Feminine gender.

Nota. In the Genitiue caſe, we ſay déste, and déstos, caſting away the firſt e, *Euphoniæ gratia*, that it ought ſound the ſmoother, yet one may alſo ſay, de éste, de éstos.

Aquéste. Aquéste, Aquésta, Aquésto, declined as in the example next above, and ſo is,

Eſſe. Eſſe, Essa, Essо: in Latin, *Iste, ista, istud*: the Italians and French haue no proper wordes to expreſſe it, but muſt vſe circumlocution: in Engliſh, he or that, neere or next to thee.

Miſmo. Miſmo, Miſma, Miſmo, declined after the ſame.

Aquél, El.

Aquél, and El: in Latin, *Ille illa, illud*: Italian, *Quello, colui, quella, Colei*: French, *Celuy iceluy, Celle, icelle*, he or that which is neither neere me nor thee, declined both alike.

Nota. Note that this El, a Pronoune, and El the Article doe differ in declining, ſpecially in the plurall number. This making Ellos, and that Los, as by comparing the one with the other, the Reader may ſee. Looke the declining of the Article El before in the Nowne.

	Masc.	Fem.	Neu.			
Sing.	Nom. el,	élla,	éllo.	Plu.	Nom. éllos,	éllas.
	Gen. dél,	d'élla,	d'éllo.		Gen. d'éllos,	d'éllas.
	Dat. para el,	para élla,	para éllo.		Dat. para éllos,	para éllas.
	Acc. a el,	a élla,	a éllo.		Accu. a éllos,	a éllas.
	Abl. d'el,	d'élla,	d'éllo.		Abl. d'éllos,	d'éllas.

Nota. Note that the Spaniard commonly vſeth this Pronoune Le before a Verbe thus, Le víno a la memoria, it came to his memorie: Le díxo, he told him: Que del alma le ſalia, which came from his ſoule: Dar le lo, to giue him that: Le reſpondió, he anſwered him.

Nota. Alſo the Spaniard vſeth this Pronoune Le toyned to the Infinitiue mode of a verbe, by changing r of the Infinitiue into l, *Euphoniæ gratia*, as Hablárle, to ſpeake vnto him, Hablálle: Oýrle, to heare him, Oylle: Vérle, to ſee him, Velle.

Now followeth Que, Quien, El Qual, in Latine *Quis, Qui, Qua, Quod*, in Italian, *Chi, Che, Il Quale, La Quale*, in French, *Qui, Lequel, Laquelle*, in Engliſh, who, which, thus.

Que, Quien.

Sing. and Plural.	Nom.	Qué.
	Gen.	de Qué.
	Dat.	para Qué.
	Accuſ.	a Qué.
	Ablat.	de Qué.

In this ſame manner is Quien declined.

El qual.

El qual.

	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.		Masc.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. el qual,	la qual,	lo qual.	Plur.	Nom. los quales,	las quales.
	Gen. del qual,	de la qual,	de lo qual.		Gen. de los quales,	de las quales.
	Dat. para qual,	para la qual,	para lo qual.		Dat. para los quales,	para las quales.
	Accuſ. al qual,	a la qual,	a lo qual.		Accuſ. a los quales,	a las quales.
	Ablat. del qual,	de la qual,	de lo qual.		Ablat. de los quales,	de las quales.

Verbes.

Of Verbes.

Verbe paſſiue. The Spaniſh tongue hath the ſame kinde of Verbes, Modes, Tenſes, Numbers and Perſons as the Latine. But for the verbe paſſiue, they make of the verbe Soy, in Latine *Sum, es, fui*, and a participle, as Amádo, Leýdo, Partído, as Soi Amádo, Leýdo, Partído, I am loued, read, parted, or with this Accuſatiue caſe or particle Se, with the third perſon actiue ſingular or plural, as Se dize, it is ſaide, Se dizen, they are ſaide, as hereafter in their place more at large ſhall be declared.

Gerunds. Alſo they haue the Gerund in Do in the ſame manner as the Latines, as Amándo, Leyéndo, Oyéndo,

Oyéndo, in Louing, Reading, Hearing. But for the Gerund in Di and Dum of the Latine, they expresse after another manner. For Gerund in Di the Spanyard vseth the Infinitiue moode and the preposition De, as De amár, of Louing, De leer, of Reading. For the Gerund in Dum, the Infinitiue moode and the Preposition A, or the Infinitiue moode of Soy with a Participle, as A amár, or Ser amádo, to be Loued, A oýr or Ser oýdo, to be Heard.

And in like manner their Supines, whereas the Latines say, { *Amatum*, *Amatu*, } they say, { A amár. De ser amádo. *Supines.*

And for Participles of the Actiue voice, *Amans*, El que áma. *Participles.*
For Participle of the Passiue voice, *Amatus*, Lo que es amádo.
For Participle of the Future in *Rus*, *Amaturus*, El que ha o espéra de amár.
For Participle of the Future in *Dus*, *Amandus*, Lo que ha de ser amádo.

All which by particular examples following shall plainly to the Reader appeere.

Of Coniugations.

The Spanish hath three coniugations, onely both of Verbes Regular, and Irregular.

1 The first endeth in ar, as Mirár, to behold: Hablár, to speake.
2 The second in er, as Perdér, to loose: Caér, to fall.
3 The third in yr or ir, as oýr, to heare: Cumplir, to accomplish.

Tenses.

The first Person singular of the Indicatiue moode Present tense of all Verbes Regular, of what Coniugation soeuer, alwaies endeth in o, Miro, I beholde, Háblo, I speake, Piérdo, I loose: Oygo, I heare.

Indicatiue moode.

Euerie {
- Preterimperfect of the Indicatiue, of Verbes Regular, of the seconde and thirde Coniugation in ia, or ya, as Perdía, I did lose: Caýa, I did fall, &c. Oýa, I did heare, Complía, I did accomplish, &c. And of the first coniugation all in áva, as Miráva, I did behold: Habláva, I did speake.
- First Preterperfect in y, or i, as oý, perdí, I haue heard, I haue lost: but of the first Coniugation all in é, as Miré, I haue beholden: Hablé, I haue spoken.
- Second Preterperfect of al the three Coniugations of all Verbes with this Verbe Hé, and the Participle, as Hé mirádo, I haue beholden: Hé leýdo, I haue read: Hé oýdo, I haue heard.
- Preterpluperfect thus, avía mirádo, leýdo, oýdo, I had beholden, read, heard.
- Future, of the Indicatiue of all Verbes Regular, & Irregular in ré, as Hablaré, I will speake: Leyré, oyeré, haré, podré, sabré, Daré.

The Terminations of Verbs thus varied as followeth.

Euerie	Imperfect of the Indicatiue of the second & thirde Coniugation thus varied.	ía, ías, ía, íamos, íades, ían,	or	ýa, ýas, ýa, ýamos, ýades, ýan,	as	Perdía, Perdías, Perdía, Perdíamos, Perdíades, Perdían,	as	oýa, oýas, oýa, oýamos, oýades, oýan.

Euerie { Imperfect of the Indicatiue of the first Coniugation, in áva, ávas, áva: ávamos, ávades, ávan, as Habláva, hablávas, habláva, hablávamos, hablávades, hablávan.

Euerie	Future of the Indicatiue of all Verbes of all Coniugations.	ré, rás, rá, rémos réys, rán,	of first, seconde, and third, Coniugation in	ár, ér, ír,	hablaré, perderé, oyré,	by adding é long or accent to the Infin. moode r.

The

The Terminations of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue.

Euerie	Present Tense of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue of Verbes of the first Conjugation thus, by changing o, of the Indicatiue Present tense into e, thus,	e,	as	háble,
		es,		hábles,
		e,		háble,
		émos,		hablémos,
		éys,		hablévs,
		en,		háblen.
Euerie	Present of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue of the seconde and thirde Conjugation, by chaunging o, of the Present of the Indicatiue into a, thus,	a,		perda,
		as,		perdas,
		a,		pérda,
		ámos,		perdámos,
		ays,		perdays,
		an,		pérdan,
Euerie	Preterimper. of the Optatiue & Subiunctiue of Verbes of the first Conjugation thus,	ára, ría, álle,		hablára, habraría, hablálle,
		áras, rías, álles,		hablárias, hablarias, hablálles,
		ára, ría, álle,		hablára, hablaría, hablálle,
		áramos, ríamos, álsemos,		hablárámos, hablaríamos, hablálsemos,
		árades, riades, álledes,		hablárades, hablariades, hablálledes,
		áran, rian, álsen,		hablárán, hablarian, hablálsen.
Euerie	Preterimperfect of the the Optatiue and Subiunctiue of the second and thirde Conjug. thus,	éra, ría, élle,		perdiéra, perdería, perdiélle,
		éras, rías, élles,		perdiéras, perderias, perdiélles,
		éra, ría, élle,		perdiéra, perdería, perdiélles,
		éramos, ríamos, élsemos,		perdiéramos, perderíamos, perdiélsemos,
		érades, riades, élledes.		perdiérades, perderiades, perdiélledes,
		éran, rían, élsen,		perdiéran, perderían, perdiélsen.

And these Preterimperfect Tenses as all other of what Conjugation soeuer of Verbes Regular, and Irregular, forme two voices of themselues of the seconde person singular of the first Preterperfect Tense of the Indicatiue moode, by taking awaie Ste, and by making it in the first Conjugation, ára, and álle, as of this seconde person of the Preterperfect of the Indicatiue singular, Reveláste, commeth the Preterimperfect of the Optatiue, and Subiunctiue Revelára, Revelálle, and of the second and thirde Conjugation of all Verbes Regular and Irregular, by changing that ste, into éra and élle, as of this Indicatiue moode entendiste, commeth the Preterimperfect of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue, entendiéra, entendiélle, of oyste, commeth oyéra, oyélle: of diste, diéra, diélle: of estuviste, estuviéra, estuviélle: of anduviste, anduviéra, anduviélle: of pudiste, pudiéra, pudiélle. And they forme the thirde voice of this Preterimperfect by putting to ia, to the Infinitiue moode, as of the Infinitiue revelar, commeth this Preterimperfect revelaría, of the Infinitiue entendér, entendería, of oyr, oyría, of dár, daría, of estár, estaría, andár, andaría.

Euery	Future of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue of verbes of the first conjugation, thus	áre,	as	Habláre.
		áres,		Habláres.
		áre,		Habláre.
		áremos,		Habláremos.
		áredes,		Habláredes.
		áren.		Habláren.
Euery	Future of the second & third Conjugation of the Opt. and Subiunctiue, thus	ére,	as	Perdiére, Oyére.
		éres,		Perdiéres, Oyéres.
		ére,		Perdiére, Oyére.
		éremos,		Perdiéremos, Oyéremos.
		éredes,		Perdiéredes, Oyéredes.
		éren.		Perdiéren. Oyéren.

Now it remaineth to giue a *Paradigma* or example of euery Conjugation of their Moodes, Tenses, Numbers and Persons, that the Student in the tongue may forme the rest by, which is the chiefest point of this our *Grammar*, and without the which the learner shall neuer be able to write or speake but by aime and rote, and so be discouraged from so laudable a purpose.

And

And for the better delight of the Reader, and for the affinitie of these two tongues, as for the pleasure and profit he may reape hereby, I haue here in the Examples following, set downe the *Italian*, that the vnderstander of both tongues, may with one labour (and yet at his ease) see the difference, the one from the other, and be hereby able in vnderstanding, writing and speaking, to practise either of them, without vsing the one for the other, or mixing them (a thing offensiue to the Spaniards nature, as all knowe who haue trauelled in Spaine.) For euen as two things very like one to the other, if you see them at diuers times, and in diuers places, may easily make one miscarrie his memorie, and mistake the one for the other, when you see either of them againe by it selfe:

Why the Italian added to the verbes following.

So if you see them both at one time, and in one place togither, and take good heede of them by comparing them; no doubt by one marke or other, you shall euer after be able to discerne, know and call them: euen so these two languages (sometime altogither so like) being thus laid togither, will cause the Reader easily to discerne and remember them.

Avér *and* Sér.

And bicause this verbe Avér, in Latine *Habere*, in Italian *Hauere*, in French *Auoir*, in English to Haue, and Sér, in Latine *Esse*, Italian *Essere*, French *Estre*, English to Be, doe serue to the conjugating or declining of all other verbes: They are best in my opinion first to be declined, especially this verbe Avér, which may fitly be called *Verbum auxiliarium*, a helpfull verbe, bicause he doth not onely helpe to decline himselfe in his owne preterperfect and preterpluperfect, but doth serue to decline all other verbes whatsoeuer in the same tenses, as by the Examples following you may see. And this verbe Sér, as before serueth, as in the Italian and French to decline all verbes Passiues, for without it neither the Spanish, Italian or French can forme or decline their Passiues, as following you may perceiue.

Avér *and* Sér.

The

AVER declined.

The declining of the first Auxiliar verbe Avér, *in Italian Hauere*, in Latin *Habere*, in English to Haue.

Indicatiue moode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	Yo HE, Tu ás, Aquel á or há. **Plural.** nosótros Avémos or Hémos vosótros Avéys. aquellos án or hán.	*Io Ho & Haggio, Poeticall.* *tu Hai,* *colui há, & háue, Poetical.* **Plural.** *Noi habbiámo & hauémo,* *voi Hauéte,* *colóro Hánno.*	*Ego HABEO,* *tu Habes,* *ille Habet.* **Plural.** *Nos Habemus,* *vos Habetis.* *illi Habent.*	I Haue. thou Hast. he hath. Plural. we Haue. yee Haue. they Haue.
Imperfect.	Avía, Avías, Avía. **Plur.** Avíamos, Avíades, Avían.	*Hauéua & Hauéa,* *Hauéui,* *Hauéua & Hauéa.* **Plur.** *Haueuámo & haueámo,* *Haueuáte,* *Hauéuano & hauéano.*	*Habebam,* *habebas,* *habebat, &c.*	I had. thou Hadst, &c.
First preter-perfect	úve, uvíste, úvo or húvo or óvo, Uvímos, uvístes, uviéron or huviéron or oviéron.	*Hébbi,* *hauésti,* *hébbe.* *Hauémmo,* *hauéste,* *hébbero.*	*Habui,* *habuisti, &c.*	I haue had, &c
Secōd perfect.	yo He, tu ás, aquél á or ha. nosótros hémos or avémos, vosótros aveýs, aquéllos án or hán.	Avído: *Io Ho, tu hai, colui ha, noi habbiámo, voi hauéte, colóro hanno.*	*hauúto*	*Habui, habuisti, &c.*	I haue Had, &c.
pluperfect tēse	Avía, avías, avía. Avíamos, avíades, avían.	Avído: *Hauéua, hauéui, hauéua. haueuámo, haueuáte, hauéuano.*	*hauúto*	*Habueram, &c.*	I had Had, &c.
Futur 1.	Avré, Avrás, Avrá. Avrémos, Avreýs, Avrán.	*Haueró, hauró & haró,* *hauerái, haurái & harái,* *hauerá, haurá & hará.* *Hauerémo, haurémo & harémo,* *haueréte, hauréte & haréte,* *haueránno, hauránno & haránno.*	*Habebo, &c.*	I shal or will haue, &c.

Imperatiue moode.

áyas tu, áya aquel, ayámos nosótros, ayáys vosótros, áyan aquéllos.	*Habbi tu,* *habbia colui,* *habbiámo noi,* *habbiáte voi,* *habbíano colóro.*	*Habe, habeto, &c.*	Haue thou, &c.

The Spanyards vse in stede of this Imperatiue moode, this word Ten of Tengo, I hold: which Tengo is often vsed of them for this verbe He.

This

AVER declined.

This Imperatiue moode, Ten of Tengo, so commonly vsed for áyas, áya, is thus declined:

The Imperatiue of Tenér, ordinarily vsed for the Imperat. of AVE'R, to Haue.	Tén tu.	Hold thou.
	Ténga aquel.	let him Hold.
	Tengámus nosótros,	Hold we, or let vs Hold.
	Tenéd vosótros.	Hold yee.
	Téngan aquéllos.	Hold they, or let them Hold.

The Optatiue moode is vsed with these signes, Oxalá, or else Osi, or Pluguiésse a Dios: in Latin, *Vtinam*: in Italian, *O Dio voglia, O che, Dio volesse che, O Dio che*: French, *Dieu vuelle, Pleust a Dieu*: English, would to God, I pray God, God graunt. The Potentiall like the Latin, with these signes, May, can, might, Would, Should, or ought: both declined like the Subiunctiues following: but that the Optatiue and Potentiall alwaies make their Future tense and Present tense all alike, as Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue: so in the Future, Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue hereafter: Oxalá yo Revéle, God graunt I reueale: Future tense also, Oxalá yo Revéle, God graunt I reueale hereafter: and so of the rest. Nota.

And because the Optatiue and Potential haue their Future tenses al one with their Present: and the Subiunctiue hath two Futures, and both differing from the Present, I hold it needfull to decline the Subiunctiue, by whom the other two are framed.

Subiunctiue moode

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como.	áya, áyas, áya.	Quando	*Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia.*	Cum	*Habeam, Habeas, &c.*	when I Had. when thou Hadst, &c.
	ayámos, ayáys, áyan.		*Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano.*			

Imperf. Como	auría, uviéra, uviésse, aurías, uviéras, uviésses, auría, uviéra, uviésse.	Quando	*haueréi, haueria, hauéssi, haueréſti, hauéſti, hauéssi, hauerébbe, haueria, hauésse.*	Cum	*haberem, &c.*	when I Had, or did haue, &c.
	auríamos, uviéramos, uviéssemos, auríades, uviérades, uviéssedes, aurían, uviéran, uviéssen.		*haueremmo, hauéssimo, haueréste, hauéste, hauerébbono, haueriano, hauéssero.*			

Or decline with H. Huviéra, Huviéssé, or Oviéra, Oviésse.

Perfec. Como	áya, áyes, áya.	avído.	Quando	*hábbia, hábbi, hábbia.*	Hauúto.	Cum	*habuerim, &c.* when I haue had, &c.
	ayámos, ayáys, áyan.			*habbiámo, habbiáte, hábbiano.*			

Pluper. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse.	avído.	Quando	*hauessi, hauésti, hauésse.*	hauúto.	Cum	*habuissem, &c.* when I had had, &c.
	uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen.			*hauéssimo, hauéste, hauéssero.*			

First Future Como	uviére, uviéres, uviére.	Quando	*haueró, haueráí, hauerá.*	hauúto.	Cum	*habuero, &c.*	when I shall haue hereafter, &c.
	uviéremos, uviéredes, uviéren.		*hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno.*				

Second

AVER declined.

The declining of the first Auxiliar verbe Avér, *in Italian Hauere*, in Latin *Habere*, in English to Haue.

Indicatiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	Yo HE, Tu ás, Aquélá or há. **Plural.** nosótros Avémos or Hémos vosótros Avéys. aquellos án or hán.	*Io Ho & Haggio, Poeticall.* *tu Hai,* *colui há, & háue, Poetical.* **Plural.** *Noi habbiámo & hauémo,* *voi Hauéte,* *colóro Hánno.*	*Ego HABEO,* *tu Habes,* *ille Habet.* **Plural.** *Nos Habemus,* *vos Habetis.* *illi Habent.*	I Haue. thou Hast. he hath. **Plural.** we Haue. yee Haue. they Haue.
Imperfect.	Avía, Avías, Avía. **Plur.** Aviamos, Avíades, Avían.	*Hauéua & Hauéa,* *Hauéui,* *Hauéua & Hauéa.* **Plur.** *Haueuámo & haueámo,* *Haueuáte,* *Hauéuano & hauéano.*	*Habebam,* *habebas,* *habebat, &c.*	I had. thou Hadst, &c.
First preter-perfect	úve, uvíste, úvo or húvo or óvo, Uvimos, uvistes, uviéron or huviéron or ovi-(éron.	*Hébbi,* *hauésti,* *hébbe.* *Hauémmo,* *hauéste,* *hébbero.*	*Habui,* *habuisti, &c.*	I haue had, &c
Secōd perfect.	yo He, tu ás, aquél á or ha. nosótros hémos or avémos, vosótros aveýs, aquéllos án or hán.	Avído: *Io Ho,* *tu hai,* *colui ha,* *noi habbiámo,* *voi hauéte,* *colóro hanno.*	*hauúto*: *Habui,* *habuisti,* *&c.*	I haue Had, &c.
pluperfect tēse	Avía, avías, avía. Avíamos, avíades, avían.	Avído: *Hauéua,* *hauéui,* *hauéua.* *haueuámo,* *haueuáte,* *hauéuano.*	*hauúto*: *Habueram,* *&c.*	I had Had, &c.
Futur	Avré, Avrás, Avrá. Avrémos, Avreýs, Avrán.	*Haueró, hauró & haró,* *hauerái, haurái & harái,* *hauerá, haurá & hará.* *Hauerémo, haurémo & harémo,* *haueréte, hauréte & haréte,* *haueránno, hauránno & haránno.*	*Habebo,* *&c.*	I shal or will haue, &c.

Imperatiue mode.

áyas tu, áyas aquel, ayámos nosótros, ayáis vosótros, áyan aquéllos.	*Habbi tu,* *habbia colui,* *habbiámo noi,* *habbiáte voi,* *habbiano colóro.*	*Habe, habete,* *&c.*	Haue thou, &c.

The Spanyards vse in stede of this Imperatiue mode, this word Ten of Tengo, I hold: which Tengo is often vsed of them for this verbe He.

Ches

AVER declined.

This Imperatiue moode, Ten of Tengo, so commonly vsed for áyas, áya, is thus declined:

The Imperatiue of Tenér, ordinarily vsed for the Imperat. of AVE'R, to Haue.	Tén tu.	Hold thou.
	Ténga aquel.	let him Hold.
	Tengámus nosótros,	Hold we, or let vs Hold.
	Tened vosótros.	Hold yee.
	Téngan aquéllos.	Hold they, or let them Hold.

The Optatiue moode is vsed with these signes, Oxalá, or else Ofi, or Pluguiésse a Dios: in Latin, *Vtinam*: in Italian, *O Dio voglia, O che, Dio volesse che, O Dio che*: French, *Dieu vuelle, Pleust a Dieu*: English, would to God, I pray God, God graunt. The Potentiall like the Latin, with these signes, May, can, might, Would, Should, or ought: both declined like the Subiunctiues following: but that the Optatiue and Potentiall alwaies make their Future tense and Present tense all alike, as Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue: so in the Future, Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue hereafter: Oxalá yo Revéle, God graunt I reueale: Future tense also, Oxalá yo Revéle, God graunt I reueale hereafter: and so of the rest. *Nota.*

And because the Optatiue and Potential haue their Future tenses al one with their Present: and the Subiunctiue hath two Futures, and both differing from the Present, I hold it needfull to decline the Subiunctiue, by whom the other two are framed.

Subiunctiue moode

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como.	áya, áyas, áya.	Quando	*Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia.*	Cum	*Habeam, Habeas, &c.*	when I Had. when thou Hadst, &c.
	ayámos, ayáys, áyan.		*Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano.*			

auría denotat tempus incertum
Uviera tempus pigens vel pterritum
Uviesse tempus futurum.

Imperf. Como	auría, uviéra, uviésse, aurías, uviéras, uviésses, auría, uviéra, uviésse.	Quando	*haueréi, haueria, hauéssi, haueréſti, hauésti, hauéssi, hauerébbe, haueria, hauésse.*	Cum	*haberem, &c.*	when I Had, or did haue, &c.
	auríamos, uviéramos, uviéssemos, auríades, uviérades, uviéssedes, aurían, uviéran, uviéssen.		*haueremmo, hauéssimo, haueréste, hauéste, hauerébbono, haueriano, hauéssero.*			

Or decline with H. Huviéra, Huviésse, or Oviéra, Oviésse.

Perfec. Como	áya, áyes, áya.	avído.	Quando	*hábbia, hábbi, hábbia.*	Hauúto.	Cum	*habuerim, &c.* when I haue had, &c.
	ayámos, ayáys, áyan.			*habbiámo, habbiáte, hábbiano.*			

vi supra.

Pluper. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse.	avído.	Quando	*hauessi, hauésti, hauésse.*	hauúto.	Cum	*habuissem, &c.* when I had had, &c.
	uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen.			*hauéssimo, hauéste, hauéssero.*			

First Future Como	uviére, uviéres, uviére.	Quando	*haueró, hauerái, hauerá.*	hauúto.	Cum	*habuero, &c.*	when I shall haue hereafter, &c.
	uviéremos, uviéredes, uviéren.		*hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno.*				

Second

Second Future Como	auré, aurás, aurá, aurémos, auréys, aurán.	avído. Quando	haueró, hauerái, hauerá. hauerémo, hauerére, hauerámo.	hauúto. Cum	habuero, &c.	when I shall haue hereafter, &c.

Infinitiue mode Present tense

AVE'R], *Hauere,*] *Habere,*] to Haue.

Preterperfect tense

Avér avído,] *Hauer hauúto,*] *Habuisse,*] to Haue had.

The Future tense

Espéro de avér, { *Douer hauere,* / *Esser per hauer,* } *Habiturum esse,*] to Haue hereafter.

Gerund

Aviéndo,] *Hauendo,*] *Habendo,*] in Hauing.

Participle

Avído,] *Hauuto,*] *Habitus,*] I Had.

Participle of the Future tense

El que espéra de avér,] *Essere per hauere,*] *Habiturus,*] to Haue hereafter.

SER

The other verbum Auixiliarum Sér, *with which all Passiues are declined:* it is in Latin *Sum, es, fui:* in Italian *Essere,* to Bée.

Infinitiue mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	Yo SOY, tu éres, aquél és. Plu. nosotros Sómos, vosotros sóys, aquéllos són.	*Io SONO, tu séi, colui é.* Plu. *Noi siámo, voi séte, coloro sóno.*	*Sum, es, est.* Plu. *Sumus, estis, sunt.*	I Am, thou Art, he Is, &c.
Imperfect.	éra, éras, éra, éramos, érades, éran.	*éra, éri, éra. erámo, & erauámo, erauáte, érano.*	*eram, eras, &c.*	I was, &c.
First Preterperfect.	Fúy, fúiste, Fúe. Fúimos, fúistes, fuéron.	*Fui, fósti, fú. Fúmo, fóste, fúrono, fúron, & fúro.*	*Fui, &c.*	I haue beene, &c.
Second Preterperfect	He, or úve, ás, or uvíste, á, or úvo. Avémos, or uvímos, auéys, or uvístes, án, or uviéron.	Sído. *Sóno, séi, e.* Stato. *Siámo, séte, sóno.* Stati.	*Fui, &c.*	I haue beene, &c.
Pluperfec.	Avía, avías, avía. Avíamos, avíades, avían.	Sído. *éra, éri, éra.* Stato. *erauámo, erauáte, eráno.* Stati.	*Fueram, &c.*	I had beene, &c.

Future

Declining of Verbes.

Future	Seré,	Sará, & ſia,	Ero, &c.	I ſhall or will be.
	ſerás,	ſarái,		
	ſerá.	ſará & ſia.		
	Serémos,	Sarémo,		
	ſeréys,	ſaréte,		
	ſerán.	ſarámno.		

Imperatiue mode

Sé tu, or ſey tu,	Sÿ, ſia, & ſie tu,	Sis, es, eſto,	We thou,
ſéa aquél.	ſia, & ſie colui,	ſit, eſto.	We he or let him be, &c.
Seámos noſótros,	Siámo noi,	Simus,	
ſéd voſótros,	ſiáte voi,	ſitis, eſtote,	
ſéan aquéllos.	ſiano coloro.	ſint, ſunto.	

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latine.
Preſ. Como	yo SE'A,	Io SIA,	ſim, ſis, &c. — when I am, &c.
	tu ſéas,	tu ſÿ, ſia,	
	aquél ſea,	colui ſia, ſie,	
	ſeámos,	ſiámo,	
	ſeáys,	ſiáte,	
	ſéan.	ſiano, & ſieno.	
Imperfect. Como.	fuéra, ſería, fuéſſe,	ſarei, fóſſi, fuſſi,	eſſem, &c. — when I was.
	fuéras, ſerías, fuéſſes,	ſaréſti, fóſſi, fúſſi,	
	fuéra, ſería, fuéſſes,	ſarébbe, fóſſe, fúſſe,	
	fuéramos, ſeríamos, fuéſſemos,	ſarémmo, fóſſimo, fúſſimo.	
	fuérades, ſeríades, fuéſſedes,	ſaréſte, fóſſe, fuſte, (fóſſero	
	fuéran, ſerían, fuéſſen.	ſarébbono, ſariano, fóſſero,	
Preter perfect. Como.	áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan, } Sído.	ſia, ſÿ, ſia, } ſtato. / ſiámo, ſiáte, ſiaon. } ſtati.	fuerim, &c. — when I haue beene, &c.
Plu. perfect. Como	uviéra, or uviéſſe, uviéras, or uviéſſes, uviéra, or uviéſſe, uviéramos, or uviéſſemos, uviérades, or uviéſſedes, uviéran, or uviéſſen, } Sído.	fóſſi, ſaréi, fóſſi, ſaréſti, fóſſe, ſarebbe, } ſtato. / fóſſimo, ſaremmo, fóſſe, ſaréte, fóſſero, ſarébbono, } ſtati.	fuiſſem, &c. — when I had beene, &c.
firſt Futu. Como	fuére, fuéres, fuére, fuéremos, fuéredes, fuéren.	ſaró, ſarái, ſará, } ſtato. / ſarémo, ſaréte, ſarámno, } ſtati.	fuero, &c. — when I ſhall be, &c.

3 Apres le futur

second Futur. Como	avré, avrás, avrá, avrémos avréys, avrán,	Sído.	Quando,	saró, sarái, sará,	stato.	Cum	fuero, &c. when I shall be, &c.
				sarémo, saróte, saráuno,	stati.		

Infinitiue mœde, Present Tense.

SE'R,] *Essere,*] *Esse,*] To be.

Preterperfect and Pluperfect,

AVE'R sido,] *Esser stato,*] *fuisse,*] To haue bœne.

Future Tense.

Auér de sér, *douer essere, hauer ad essere,* *fore, futurum esse,* To be hœre-after.

Gerund.

Siéndo,] *Essendo,*] The Latine wants,] In being.

Participle.

SI'DO] stato,] bœne.

An Example of the first Coniugation of Verbes Regular in AR, as Revelár] in Italian *Riueláre*] Latine *Reueláre*] in English] to Reueale or discouer, as Revelár, in Spanish is also as Rebelár, to rebell.

1. *Coniug. of Regular Verbes in* AR, REVELAR

Indicatiue mœde

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	yo REV'ELO, tu Revélas, aquel revéla, revelámos, reveláys, Revélan.	*IO RIVE'LO, tu riuéli, colúi reuéla, riueliámo, riueláte, riuélano,*	*Reuelo, reuelas, reuelat, &c.*	I reueale, Thou reuealest, &c.
Imperfect.	reveláva, revelávas, reveláva, revelávamos, revelávades, revelávan,	*riueláua, riueláui, riueláua, riuelauamo, riuelauáte, riueláuano,*	*reuelabam, &c.*	I did reueale,
First Perf.	revelé, reveláste, reveló, revelámos, reveláste, reveláron,	*riueláí, riuelásti, riueló, riuelámmo, riueláste, riuelárono, riueláron, riueláro, riuelár.*	*reuelaui, &c.*	I haue reuealed, &c.

second

second Perf.	hé, or úve, ás, or uvíste, á, or úvo, avémos, or uvímos avéys, or uvístes, án, or uviéron,	reveládo.	*ho,* *hái,* *há,* *habbiámo,* *habbiáte,* *hánno,*	*riueláto*	*reuelaui, &c.*	I haue reuealed, &c.
Plu-perfect.	avía, avías, avía, avíamos, avíades, avían,	reveládo.	*hauéua,* *hauéui,* *hauéua,* *haueuámo,* *haueuáte,* *hauéuano,*	*riueláto*	*reuelaueram, &c.*	I had reuealed, &c.
Futur.	revelaré, revelarás, revelará, revelarémos, revelaréys, revelarán,		*riuelaró,* *riuelarái,* *reuelará,* *riuelarémo,* *riuelaréte,* *riuelaránno,*		*reuelabo, &c.*	I shall or will reueale, &c.

Oftentimes for the Future of this Indicatiue Moode, as well of this first Coniugation, as of al the rest, is vsed the Infinitiue Moode, and the Present tense of the Verbe Avér, with a Particle going betweene them, as Revelár lo hé, Revelár lo hás, Revelár lo á. And so of the other Coniugations, as Entendér lo he, Entendér lo ás, oýr lo hé, oyr lo hás, &c.

Imperatiue moode.

revéla tu, revéle aquél, **Plu.** revelémos nosótros, reuelád vosótros, revélan aquéllos,	*riuéla tu,* *riueli colúi,* *riuelámo noi,* *riueláte voi,* *riuélino colóro,*	*reuéla, reueláto* *reuelet, reuelato* *reuelemus,* *reuelatis,* *reuelent.*	Reueale thou, bee thou reuealed, &c.

Subiunctiue moode with signes, Si, Como, or other Coniunction.

	Spanish.	Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	Yo Revéle, tu Revéles, aquel Revéle. **Plurall.** Revelémos, Reveléys, Revélen.	*Quando*	*Io Riuéli,* *tu Riuéli,* *colúi Riuéli.* **Plurall.** *Riueliámo,* *Riueliáte,* *Riuélino.*	*Cum* *Reuelem, &c*	when I doe Reueale, &c.
Imperfect. Como	Reuelára, revelaría, revelásse, Reveláras, revelarías, revelásses, Revelára, revelaría, revelásse, Reveláramos, revelaríamos, revelássemos Revelárades, revelaríades, revelássedes, Revelárán, revelarían, revelássen.	*Quando*	*Riuelassi, riuelaréi, riuelaría,* *Riuelásti, riuelaresti,* *Riuelásse, riuelarébbe, riuelaría,* *Riuelássimo, riuelarémmo,* *Riuelaste, riuelaréste,* *Riuelássero, riuelarébbono, riuelaríano*	*Cum* *Reuelarem, &c.*	when I did Reueale, &c.

perfect. Como	áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	Reveládo.	Quando	Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano.	Riuelato.	Cum	Reuelauerim, &c.	whē I haue reuealed, &c.
Pluperfect Como	uviéra or uviésse, uviéras or uviésses, uviéra or uviésse, uviéramos or uviéssemos, uviérades or uviéssedes, uviéran or uviéssen,	Reveládo.	Quando	Hauessi, hauésti, hauésse, hauéssim, hauéste, hauéssero,	Riuelato.	Cum	Reuelassem, &c.	when I had reuealed, &c.
First future. Como	Reveláre, Reveláres, Reveláre, Revelarémos, Reveláredes, Reveláren,		Quando	Haueró, hauerái, hauerá, hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno.	Riueláto.	Cum	Reuelauero, &c.	when I shal or will Reueale, &c.
Secōd Futur Como	uviére or avré, uviéres or avrés, uviére or avrá, uvierémos or avrémos, uviéredes or avréys, uviéren or avrán,	Reveládo.	Quando	Haueró, hauerái, hauerá, hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno,	Riuelato.	Cum	Reuelauero, &c.	when I shal or will Reueale, &c.

Infinitiue mode Present tense.

Revelár,] *Riuelare,*] *Reuelare,*] to Reueale or discouer.

Preterperfect tense.

Aver reveládo,] *Hauér riuelato,*] *Reuelauisse,*] to haue Reuealed.

The Future tense.

Auér o Esperár de Revelár, { *Douer Riuelare, Essere per Riuelare, Hauer a Riuelare,* } to Reueale hereafter.

Gerund.

Revelándo,] *Riuelando,*] *Reuelando,*] in Reuealing.

Supine of the Actiue signification.

a Revelár,] *a Riuelare,*] *Reuelatum*] to be about to Reueale.

Supine of the Passiue signification.

De sér Revelado] *D'essere Riuelato*] *Reuelatu*] to be Reuealed.

Participle of the Present tense and Actiue voice.

El que Revéla,] *Riuelante,*] *Reuelans,*] Reuealing.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passiue voice.

Reveládo] *Riuelato,*] *Reuelatus,*] Reuealed.

All verbes which haue their Infinitiues in AR, are declined in all points like this here declined, except the Irregulars here following in ar.

An

An Example of the second Coniugation of verbes *Regular in* ER, *as* Entendér, *in Italian Intendere,* Latin *Intelligere,* to Understand.

2. Coniug. of Regular verbs in er Entendér.

Iudicatiue moode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	yo ENTIENDO, tu Entiéndes, aquel Entiénde. **Plurall.** Entendémos, Entendéys, Entiénden.	*Io Inténdo,* *tu Inténdi,* *colúi Inténde.* **Plur.** *Intendiámo,* *Intendéte,* *Intendino.*	*Intelligo, &c.*	I do Understand, &c.
Imperfect.	Entendía, Entendías, Entendía. Entendíamos, Entendíades, Entendían.	*Intendéua & Intendéa,* *Intendéui,* *Intendéua & Intendéa,* *Intendeuámo,* *Intendeuáte,* *Intendéuano.*	*Intelligebam, &c.*	I did Understand, &c.
First perfect.	Entendí, Entendíste, Entendió, Entendímos, Entendístes, Entendiéron.	*Intési,* *Intendísti,* *Intése,* *Intendémmo,* *Intendéste,* *Intésero.*	*Intellexi, &c.*	I haue Understood, &c.
Secōd perfect.	2 3 He or úve, ás or uviste, á or úvo. hémos or uvímos, avéys or uvístes, án or uviéron. Entendído	*HO* *hái* *ha* } *Intéso.* *habbiámo* *hauéte* *hánno* } *Intési.*	*Intellexi, &c.*	I haue Understood, &c.
pluperfect tēse	Avía, avías, avía. Aviámos, avíades, avían. Entendído	*hauéua* *hauéui* *hauéua* } *Intéso.* *haueuámo* *haueuáte* *hauéuano* } *Intési.*	*Intellexeram, &c.*	I had Understood, &c.
Futur	Entenderé, Entenderás, Entenderá. Entenderémos, Entenderéys, Entenderán.	*Intenderó,* *Intenderái,* *Intenderá,* *Intenderémo,* *Intenderéte,* *Intenderánno.*	*Intelligam, &c.*	I shall or will Understand.

Vi supra 2. futur

Imperatiue moode.

Entiénde tu, Entiénde aquel. Entendámos nosótros, Entendéd vosótros, Entiéndan aquellos.	*Intendi tu,* *Intenda colui,* *Intendiámo noi,* *Intendéte voi,* *Inténdano colóro.*	*Intellige, Intelligito.* *Intelligat, Intelligito.*	Understand thou, Understand he or let him understand.

Entendér.

Second Coniugation of Regular Verbes in ER, *as* ENTENDER.

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	yo ENTIE'NDA, tu entiéndas, aquel entiénda, Plu. entendámos, entendáys, entiéndan.	Quando	yo INTENDA, tu inténdi, colui inténda, Plu. intendiámo, intendiáte, inténdano,	Cum	intelligam &c.	when I doe vnderstand. &c.
Imperfect. Como.	entendiéra, entendería, entendiésse, entendiéras, entenderias, entendiésses, entendiéra, entenderia, entendiésses. entendiéramos, entenderiamos, entendiéssemos, entendiérades, entenderiades, entendiéssedes, entendiéran, entenderian, entendiéssen.	Quando	intenderei, intenderia, intendessi, intenderesti, intendéssi, intenderebbe, intenderia, intendesse, intenderémo, intendissimo, intenderésti, intendésti, intenderébbero, intenderieno, intendessero,	Cum	intelligerem, &c.	when I did vnderstand.
Perf. Como	áya, áyas, áya, áyamos, ayáys, áyan. } Entendído.	Quando	hábbia, hábbi, hábbia, } inteso. habbiámo, habbiáte, hábbiano, } intesi.	Cum	intellexerim, &c.	when I haue vnderstood, &c.
Pluperfect. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen, } Entēdído	Quando	haueréi, & hauéssi, haueréssi, & hauéssi, haueréb be, & hauésse, } inteso. hauerémmo, & hauessimo, haueréste, & hauéste, haueréb bero, & hauéssero, } intesi.	Cum	intellexissem, &c.	when I had vnderstoode.
First future. Como	Entendiére, entendiéres, entendiére, entendiéremos, entendiéredes, entendiéren.			Cum	intellexero &c.	when I shal or will vnderstande &c.
second future. Como	uviére, or auré, uviéres, or aurás, uviére, or aurá, uviéremos, or aurémos, uviéredes, or auréys, uviéren, or aurán, } Entendído	Quando	haueró, hauerái, hauerá, } inteso. hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno, } intesi.	Cum	intellexero &c.	when I shal vnderstand. &c.

Infinitiue moode Present Tense.

Entendér,] *Intendére,*] *Intelligere*] To vnderstand.

Preterperfect Tense.

auér entendído,] *hauer intéso,*] *intellexisse,*] To haue vnderstood.

The Future Tense.

aver o Esperár de entendér, { *douer intendere,* / *hauer ad intendere,* / *Esser per intendere,* } { *intellecturum,* / to vnderstande / hereafter.

Gerund.

entendiéndo,] *intendendo,*] *intelligendo*] In vnderstanding.

Supines of the actiue voice.

a entendér,] *ad intendere*] *intellectum*] To vnderstand.

Supine of the passiue voice.

de sér entendído,] *d'essere intéso,*] *intellectu*] To be vnderstood.

Participle

Participle of the actiue voice and present Tense.

el que entiénde,] *intendente*] *intelligens*,] Vnderstanding.

Participle of the Preter tense and passiue voice.

entendido,] *intésô*] *intellectus*] Vnderstode.

All Verbes whose Infinitiues end in er, are in all points declined like this except the irregular in er following.

An Example of the third and last Coniugation of Regular verbes in Ir or Yr, as ABRIR, in Italian Aprire, Latin Aperire, to Open, Oyr, Italian Vdire, Latin Audire, to Heare.

3. and last coniugation of Verbes Regular in Ir, or Yr.

Indicatiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	OYO, y OYGO, óyes, óye. Plur. oýmos, oys, óyen.	ODO, odi, ode. Plur. vdiámo, vdite, ódono.	Audio, &c.	I doe Heare, &c.
Imperfect.	Oýa, oýas, oýa. oýamos, oýades, oýan.	Vdina, vdini, vdina. vdiuámo, vdiuáte, vdinano.	Audiebam, &c.	I did Heare, &c.
First Perf.	Oý, oýíste, oyó, oýmos, oýístes, oyéron.	Vdí & vdij, vdísti, vdi. vdimmo, vdiste, (ro, vdir. vdirono, vdiron, vdí-	Audiui, &c.	I haue heard, &c.
second Perfect.	He, oz úve, ás, oz uvíste, á, oz úvo, ávemos, oz uvímos, avéys, oz uvístes, án, oz uviéron,	Oýdo.	Ho, hai, ha, habbiámo, hauéto, hánno,	Vdito.	Audiui, &c.	I haue heard. &c.
Pluperfect.	avía, avías, avía, avíamos, avíades, avían,	Oýdo.	hauéua, hauéui, hauéua, hauenámo, hauenáte, hauéuano,	Vdito.	Audiueram, &c.	I had heard.
future.	oyré, oyrás, oyrá, oyrémos, oyréys, oyrán,	vdiró, vdirái, vdirá, vdirémo, vdiréte, vdirámno.	Audiam, &c.	I shall oz will heare, &c.

Imperatiue mode.

Imperatiue mode.	Oýe tu, oýga, oz óya aquel, oyámos nosotros, o 'd vosótros, oyan, oz óygan aquellos,	ódi tu, óda colui, vdiámo noi, vdíte voi, ódano coléro,	audi, audito, audiat, audito, &c.	Heare thou, Heare he oz let him heare, &c.

The

The Third and last Coniugation of verbes Regular in IR, *and* YR.

OYR *declined.*

Subiunctitue moode

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como.	O'YA, or óyga, óyas, or óygas, óya, or óyga, oyámos, or oygámos, oyáys, or oygáys, óyan, or óygan.	*Quando*	*OD'A,* *ódi,* *óda.* *vdiámo,* *vdiáte,* *ódano.*	*Cum*	*Audiam, &c.*	When I heare.
Imper. Como	Oyéra, oyería, oyésse, oyéras, oyerías, oyésses, oyéra, oyería, oyésse. oyéramos, oyríamos, oyéssemos, oyérades, oyríades, oyéssedes, oyéran, oyrían, oyéssen.	*Quando*	*Vdíssi, vdiréi, vdería,* *vdíssi, vdirésti,* *vdísse, vdirébbe, vdiría.* *vdíssimo, vdirémo,* *vdíste, vdiréste,* *vdíssero, vdirébbono, vdiríano*	*Cum*	*Audirem, &c.*	when I did heare, &c.
Perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya. ayámos, ayaýs, áyan.	Oýdo. *Quando*	*Hábbia,* *hábbi,* *hábbia.* *habbiámo,* *habbiáte,* *hábbiano.*	*Vdito. Cum*	*Audiuerim, &c.*	when I haue heard, &c.
plupe. Como	Uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen.	oýdo.	*Quando,* *Hauéssi, haueréi, hauería,* *hauéssi, haueréſti,* *hauésse, hauerébbe, hauría,* *hauessimo, hauerémo,* *hauéste, haueréste.* *hauéssero, hauerébbono, hauríano.*	*vdito.*	*Cum Audiuissem &c.*	when I had heard, &c
First Future Como	Oyére, oyéres, oyére, oyéremos, oyéredes, oyéren.			*Cum*	*Audiuero, &c.*	when I shall heare, &c.
Second Future Como	Uviére, or auré, uviéres, or aurás, uviére, or aurá. uviéremos, or aurémos uviéredes, or auréys, uviéren, or aurán.	oýdo. *Quãdo*	*Haueró,* *hauerái,* *hauerá.* *hauerémo,* *haueréte,* *haueránno.*	*vdito*	*Cum Audiuero, &c.*	when I shal heare.

Infinitiue moode present tense

OY'R,]	*Vdire,*]	*Audire,*]	to Heare.

Preterperfect tense

avér Oýdo]	*hauer Vdito,*]	*Audiuisse,*]	to haue Heard.

The Future tense

avér de Oýr,	*douer Vdire,* *hauer ad Vdire,* *esser per Vdire,*	*Auditum esse,*]	to Heare hereafter.

Gerund

Gerund.

Oyéndo,]	*Odendo*,]	*Audiendo*,]	in Hearing.

Supine of the Actiue voice.

a Oýr,]	*Vdire*,]	*Auditum*,]	to Heare.

Supine of the Passiue voice.

de ser Oýdo,]	*d'essere Vdito*,]	*Auditu*,]	to be Heard.

Participle of the Actiue voice and Present tense.

el que Oye,]	*chi Ode*,]	*Audiens*,]	Hearing.

Participle of the Passiue voice and Preter tense.

Oýdo,]	*Vdito*,]	*Auditus*,]	Heard.

All verbes whose Infinitiues end in ir, or yr, are declined in euerie respect like this: except those in ir and yr, in the Irregulars following.

Of Verbes Passiues.

The Spaniards as the Italian and French decline their Verbes passiues with their Verbe *Sum, es, fui*, and the Participle of the Preter tense, as of Revelár, to reueale: soy Reveládo, I am reuealed.

The Spanish formeth the Participle Passiue of the first and third Conjugation of their Infinitiue mode, by taking away r, and putting to do, as of Revelár, Reveládo, Pedír, to require, Pedido, required, Oyr, to heare, Oýdo, heard.

But in the second Conjugation they take away r as before, and change the last e into y or i, and adde to do as aforesaide, as Leer, to read, Leýdo: Entendér, to vnderstand, Entendido.

A Verbe Passiue thus declined.

Indicatiue mode

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pret.	YO SOY,	Reveládo.	*IO SO'NO*,	*Riuelato.*	*Reuelor*,	I am Reuealed.
	tu éres,		*tu sei*,		*Reuelaris*, &c.	thou art Reuealed.
	aquél és,		*colúi é*,			
	Plu.		Plu.			
	Sómos,	Reveládos.	*Siámo*,	*Riuelati.*		
	sóys,		*sête*,			
	són,		*sóno*,			
Imperfect.	E'ra,	Reveládo.	*E'ra*,	*Riuelato.*	*Reuelabar*,	I was Reuealed
	éras,		*éri*,		*Reuelabaris*, &c.	thou wast reuea-
	éra,		*éra*,			led, &c.
	éramos,	Reveládos.	*erámo*, & *eranámo*,	*Riuelati.*		
	érades,		*eráte*,			
	éran,		*érano*,			
First perfect.	Fúy,	Reveládo.	*Fui*,	*Riuelato.*	*Reuelatus sum vel fui*, &c.	I hane bene Re-
	fuéste,		*fósti*,			uealed, &c.
	fue,		*fú*,			
	fuymos,	Reveládos.	*fúmo*,	*Riuelati.*		
	fuístes,		*fóste*,			
	fuéron,		*fúrono, fúro, fúron*,			
second Perfect	HE, or úve	Sído, Sído, Sído, Reveládo.	*Sono Stato*, *sei Stato*, *e Stato*,	*Riuelato.*	*Reuelatus sum vel fui, idem vt antea*, &c.	I hane bene re-
	as, or uvíste					uealed,
	a, or úvo					&c.
	Hémos, or uvímos	Sído, Sído, Sído, Reveládos.	*Siámo Stati*, *sête Stati*, *son Stati*,	*Riuelati.*		
	avéis, or uvístes					
	an, or uviéron					

Pluperfect.

pluperfect.	Avía	Sído,	Reveládo.	E'ra	Stato,	Riuelato.	Reuelatus eram vel fueram, &c.	I had beene Reuealed, &c.
	avías	Sído,		éra	Stato,			
	avía	Sído,		éra	Stato,			
	avíamos	Sído,	Reveládos.	eramo	Stati,	Riueláti.		
	avíades	Sído,		erate	Stati,			
	avian	Sído,		érano	Stati,			
future	Seré,		Reveládo.	Saró,		Riueláto.	Reuelabor, &c.	I shall or will be Reuealed.
	serás,			sarái,				
	será,			sará,				
	Serémos,		Reveládos.	Sarémo,		Riueláti.		
	seréys,			saréte,				
	serán,			saránno,				

Imperatiue mode

Sé tu,	Reveládo,	Sia, & sÿ tu,	Riueláto.	Reuelare, Reueletur, &c.	be thou Reuealed,
sea aquél,		sia, & sie colui,			let him be Reuealed, &c.
Seámos,	Reveládos.	siámo,	Riueláti.		
séd,		siáte,			
Séan,		siano,			

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spanish.			Italian.			Latin.	
Pret. Como	yo Séa	Reveládo.	Quando	Io Sia	Riueláto.	Cum	Reuelar, &c.	When I am Reuealed, &c
	tu séas			tu sÿ, sia				
	aquel séa			colui sia, sie				
	Seámos	Reveládos.		siámo	Riueláti.			
	seáys			siáte				
	séan			siano & sieno				
Imperfect Como	Fuéra, sería, fuésse	Reveládo.	Quando	Fósi, fúsi, sarési, saria	Riuelato.	Cum	Reuelarer, &c.	When I was Reuealed, &c
	fuéras, serías, fuésses			fósti, fusti, saresti,				
	fuéra, sería, fuésse			fósse, fusse, sarébbe, saria				
	Fuéramos, seríamos, fuéssemos	Reveládos.		fóssimo, fussimo, sarémmo	Riuelati.			
	fuérades, seriades, fuéssedes			fóste, fuste, saréste,				
	fuéran, serían, fuéssen			fóssero, fússero, sarébbono, (sariano				
perfect Como	A'ya Sido	Reuelado.	Quando	Sia Stato	Riuelato.	Cum	Reuelatus sim vel fuerim, &c.	Whē I haue been reuealed, &c.
	áyas Sido			sÿ & sia stato				
	áya Sido			sia & sie stato				
	ayámos Sido	Reveládos.		siámo stati	Riuelati.			
	ayáys Sido			siáte stati				
	áyan Sido			síano stati				
pluperfect tense Como	Uviéra or uviésse Sído	Reveládo.	Quando	Fósi, fúsi, saréi, saria stato	Riuelato.	Cum	Reuelatus essem vel fuissem, &c	Whē I had been reuealed, &c.
	uviéras or uviésses Sído			fósti, fústi, sareſti stato				
	uviéra or uviésse Sído			fósse, fússe, sarébbe stato				
	uviéramos or uviéssemos sído	Reveládos.		fóssimo, fússimo, sarémo stati	Riuelati.			
	uviérades or uviéssedes Sído			fóste, fúste, seréste stati				
	uviéran or uviéssen Sído			fóssero, fússero, sarebbono stati (sariano				
Futur Como	Fuére or uviére or avré sído	Reveládo.	Quando	Saró stato	Riuelato.	Cum	Reuelatus ero vel fuero, &c.	When I shal be Reuealed, &c.
	fuéres or uviéres or avras sído			sarái stato				
	fuére or uviéres or avra sído			sará stato				
	fuéremos or uviéremos or avrémos sído	Reveládos.		sarémo stati	Riuelati.			
	fuéredes or uviéredes or avréys sído			saréte stati				
	fuéren or uviéren or avrán sído			saránno stati				

Infinitiue

Infinitiue mode Present tense.

Ser Reueládo,] *Riuelarſi, eſſere Riuelato,] Reuelari,]* to be Reuealed.

Preter tense.

Avér Sido Reuelád o,] *Eſſere ſtato Reuelato,] Reuelatum eſſe vel fuiſſe,]* to haue been reuealed.

Future tense.

Avér de sér Reuelád o, { *Douer eſſere Riuelato, / hauer ad eſſere Riuelato,* } { *Reuelatum iri vel / Reuelandum eſſe,* } to be Reuealed hereafter.

Participle of the Present tense.

Lo que es Reuelád o,] *Riuelato,] Reuelatus,]* that which is Reuealed.

Participle of the Future tense.

Lo que ha de ser Reuelád o, { *Hauendo ad eſſere Riuelato, / hauendo a Riuelarſi,* } { *Reuelandus,* } { to be Reuealed hereafter.

After this manner in euery reſpect all other verbes Paſſiues Regular or Irregular of what Coniugation ſoeuer are to be declined as of the ſecond Coniugation Soy Vendido, Poſſeydo, Defendido, and of the third Coniugation, as Soy Oydo, Corregido, Seguido, and ſo of the reſt.

Note that this Acculatiue caſe Se of the Pronoune ioyned with the third perſon of verbes Actiues, make them haue the Paſſiue ſignification, as Dize, he ſaith, Se dize, it is ſaid. *Nota.*

Now will I handle and intreate of the verbes Irregular (in which is found hardnes and difficultie to the learner for their declining) in ſuch order and manner that he may with his eaſe or very little paine decline any of them whatſoeuer: for which purpoſe and for whoſe eaſe and profite, I haue to my great labour brought them into the forme as followeth, and haue ſo diligently ſearched, that no one of them neede deſire to his vſe (as I hope) ſhall be wanting, not here following ſet downe, that my labours may be anſwerable to my deſire, and the learners profit to my paines.

I. Coning. of Verbes Irregular in AR.

The firſt Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in AR, as DAR, *in Italian and Latin Dare*, to Giue.

Nota.

The verbes Irregular like as the Regular diuided into three Coniugations, the firſt in ar, the ſecond in er, the third in ir or yr.

The verbes Irregular differ from the Regular afore going in their firſt Preterperfect of the Indicatiue, and Preterimperfect of the Subiunctiue, as by the Examples following you may ſee.

Indicatiue mode.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latin.	
Prez.	yo DOY,	*Io DO,*	*Do,*	I doe Giue, &c.
	tu Dás,	*tu Dái,*	*Das,*	
	aquel Da.	*colui Da.*	*Dat, &c.*	
	Plur.	Plur.		
	Dámos,	*Diámo or Dáme,*		
	Dáys,	*Dáte,*		
	Dán.	*Dánno.*		
Imperf.	Dáva,	*Dáua,*	*Dabam, &c.*	I did Giue, &c.
	Dávas,	*Dáua,*		
	Dáva.	*Dáua.*		
	Dávamos,	*Dauamo,*		
	Dávades,	*Daváte,*		
	Dávan.	*Dáuano.*		
First Perfect	Dí,	*Diedi & Dei,*	*Dedi, &c.*	I haue Giuen, &c.
	Díſte,	*Déſti,*		
	Dió.	*Diede & Dette,*		
	Dímos,	*Démmo,*		
	Díſtes,	*Deſte,*		
	Diéron.	*Diédero.*		

Second

Second Perfect	yo He tu ás aquel á. hémos aveýs án	Dádo.	*Ho* *hai* *ha* *habbiámo* *hauete* *hánno*	*Dato.*	*Dedi, &c. vt supra.*	I haue Giuen, &c. as next aboue.
Pluperf.	Avía Avías Avía Avíamos Avíades Avían	Dádo.	*Hauéua* *hauéui* *hauéua* *haueuámo* *haueuáte* *hauéuano*	*Dato.*	*Dederam, &c.*	I had Giuen, &c.
Future.	Daré, Darás, Dará. Darémos, Daréys, Darán.		*Daró,* *Darái,* *Dará.* *Darémo,* *Daréte,* *Daránno.*		*Dabo, &c.*	I shall or will Giue, &c.

Imperatiue moode.

Dá tu, Dé aquél. Démos, Dád, Dén.	*Da tu,* *Dia colui.* *Diámo,* *Date,* *Diáno.*	*Da dato,* *Det dato, &c.*	Giue thou, &c.

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	YO De, tu des, aquel De, démos, déys, dén,	*Quando*	*IO Día,* *tu día,* *colui día,* *diámo,* *diáte,* *díano,*	*Cum*	*Dem, &c.*	When I doe giue, &c.
Imperfect.	diéra, daría, diésse, diéras, darías, diésses, diéra, daría, diésse, diéramos, daríamos, diéssemos, diérades, daríades, diéssedes, diéran, darían, diéssen.	*Quando*	*déssi, daréi, daría,* *déssi, darésti,* *désse, darébbe, daria,* *déssimo, darémmo,* *déste, daréste,* *déssero, darébbono, daríano,*	*Cum*	*Darem, &c.*	When I did giue, &c.
perfect. Como	áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan,	Dádo.	*hábbia,* *hábbi,* *hábbia,* *habbiámo,* *habbiáte,* *hábbiano.*	*Dato.*	*Dederim, &c.*	When I haue giuen, &c.

Pluperfect

Plu-perfect. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéros, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen.	Dádo	*Quando* *hauessi, haurei, hauésti, haueréſti, hauésse, hauerébbe, hauéssimo, hauerémmo, hauéste, haueréste, hauéssero, hauerébbono,*	*Dáto.* *Cum* *dedissem, &c.*	When I had giuen, &c.
future, Como	diére, diéres, diére, diéremos, diéredes, diéren.	*Quando*	*haueró, hauerái, hauerá, hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno,*	*Dato.* *Cum* *Dedero, &c.*	When I shall giue, &c.

Infinitiue moode Present tense.

DA'R,] *Dare,*] *Dare,*] To giue.

Preterperfect Tense.

avér Dádo, { *hauer dato, douer dare, hauer a dare.* } { *Dedisse.* } To haue giuen.

Gerund.

Dando,] *dando,*] *dando,*] In giuing.

Participle of the Present tense, and Actiue voice.

El que da,] *Daute,*] *Dans,*] giuing.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passiue voice.

Dado,] *Dato,*] *Datus*] giuen.

Participle of the Future tense.

El que há, or espéra de dár] *Essere per dare*] *Daturum esse*] to giue hæreafter.

These here vnder written onely differ from the Regular verbes in the first preterperfect tense of their Indicatiue moode, which alway change Car of the Infinitiue into qué, and gar into gue, as

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Preterperfects.
Acercár, to come nære,	yo Acérco,	Acerqué.
Cercár, to compasse,	yo Cérco,	Cerqué.
Cargár, to charge, to burden,	yo Cárgo,	Cargué.
Achicár, to make little,	yo Achíco,	Achiqué.
Ahogár, to choake, to drowne,	yo Ahógo,	Ahogué.
Allegár, to come nære,	yo Allégo,	Allegué.
Ahorcár, to hang vp,	yo Ahórco,	Ahorqué.
Anegár, to drowne,	yo Anégo,	Anegué.
Arrancár, to plucke vp,	yo Arránco,	Arranqué.
Arremangár, to tucke vp,	yo Arremángo,	Arremangué.
Arriscár, to endanger,	yo Arrísco,	Arrisqué.
Apesgár, to weie downe,	yo Apésgo,	Apesgué.
Assulcár, to furrow,	yo Asúlco,	Asulqué.
Bogár, to rowe,	yo Bógo,	Bogué.
Bolcár, to tumble downe,	yo Bólco,	Bolqué.
Castigár, to chastise,	yo Castígo,	Castigué.
Calcár, to kicke vnder fæte,	yo Cálco,	Calqué.
Colgár, to hang,	yo Cuélgo,	Colgué.
Cocár, to gape at, to mocke,	yo Cuéco,	Coqué.
Cavalgár, to ride,	yo Caválgo,	Cavalgué.
Chocár, to sucke,	yo Chuéco,	Choqué.
Denegár, to denie,	yo Deniégo,	Denegué.
Derrocár, to throwe downe,	yo Derruéco,	Derrogué.
Descolgár, to vnhang,	yo Descuélgo,	Descolgué.
Desfogár, to coole,	yo Desfuégo,	Desfogué,

Infinitiues.	Pzef.	Pzeterperfects.
Embarcár, to embarke,	yo Embárco,	Embarqué.
Desligár, to vnty,	yo Desligo,	Desligué.
Embaucár, to cast into a hole,	yo Embáuco,	Embauqué.
Embocár, *idem*,	yo Embóco,	Emboqué.
Desnegár, to recant,	yo Desniégo,	Desnegué.
Enarcár, to chest vp,	yo Enárco,	Enarqué.
Divulgár, to publish,	yo divúlgo,	Divulgué.
Empegár, to pitch,	yo Empiégo,	Empegué.
Fabricár, to frame,	yo Fabrico,	Fabriqué.
Encenegár, to durt,	yo Encienégo,	Encenegué.
Fregár, to rub,	yo Friégo,	Fregué.
Holgár, to be glad,	yo Huélgo,	Holgué.
Mancár, to want,	yo Mánco,	Manqué.
Jugár, to play,	yo Juégo,	Jugué.
Marcár, to marke,	yo Márco,	Marqué.
Mercár, to buie,	yo Miérco,	Merqué.
Mascár, to chew,	yo Másco,	Masqué.
Mendigár, to beg,	yo Mendígo,	Mendigué.
Navegár, to saile,	yo Navégo,	Navegué.
Otorgár, to graunt,	yo Otórgo,	Otorgué.
Pelscár, to pinch,	yo Pelsco,	Pelsqué.
Pagár, to pay,	yo Págo,	Pagué.
Pescár, to fish,	yo Pésco,	Pesqué.
Plegár, to fold,	yo Pliégo,	Pliegué.
Regár, to water,	yo Riégo,	Regué.

These here aboue and their like in all other Tenses varie nothing from the verbes regular in ar afoze going, as Juzgár, to iudge, the Indicatiue pzelent Tense Juzgo, I iudge, Pzeterimperfect Juzgáva, first Pzeterperfect Juzgué, the second Perfect He juzgádo, the Pzeterpluperfect avia Juzgádo, Future Juzgaré. Imperatiue Juzga. The Pzelent Tense of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue Oxalá oz Si Júzgue, the Pzeterimperfect Tense Juzgára, juzgaría, juzgásse, Perfect aya juzgádo, Pluperfect uviéra oz uviésse Juzgádo, Future Juzgáre. Infinitiue Juzgár. Participle Juzgádo.

ESTAR *Of Verbes Irregular the first Coniugation in* AR, *as* Estár, in Italian *Essere*, in Latin *Esse*, To be, to stand.

Indicatiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pzef.	YO ESTO'Y,	*IO STO*,	*Sto*, &c.	I stande, oz I am, &c.
	tu estás,	*tu stái*,		
	aquel está,	*colui sta*,		
	estámos,	*stámo*,		
	estays,	*state*,		
	están.	*stánno*.		
Imperfect.	estáva,	*stáua*,	*stabam*, &c.	I was oz did stande, &c.
	estávas,	*stái*,		
	estáva,	*stáua*,		
	estávamos,	*stauámo*,		
	estávades,	*stauáto*,		
	estávan.	*stáuano*.		
First Perf.	estúve,	*stetti*, & *stei*,	*steti*, &c.	I haue beene, oz haue stoode, &c.
	estuvíste,	*stésti*,		
	estúvo,	*stéte*,		
	estuvímos,	*stémo*,		
	estuvístes,	*stéste*,		
	estvuiéron.	*stétero*.		

second

Second Perfect.	yo Hé,	Eſtádo.	ſóno,	Stato.	ſteti, &c. vt ſupra.	I haue bene, or haue ſtood, &c.
	tu ás,		ſés,			
	aquel há,		é,			
	hémos,		ſiámo,	Stati.		
	avéys,		ſéte,			
	án,		ſóno,			
Pluperfect.	avía,	Eſtádo.	éra,	Stato.	ſteteram, &c.	I had bene, or had ſtood, &c.
	avías,		éri,			
	avía,		éra,			
	aviámos,		erauámo,	Stati.		
	aviádes,		erauáte,			
	avían,		érano,			
future.	Eſtaré,		ſtaró,		Stabo, &c.	I ſhall or will ſtande or be, &c.
	eſtarás,		ſtarái,			
	eſtará,		ſtará,			
	eſtarémos,		ſtarémo,			
	eſtanéys,		ſtaréte,			
	eſtarán.		ſtaránno.			

Imperatiue mode.

Impe ratiue mode.	Eſtá, ſta,	ſtá,	ſta, ſtato, &c.
	eſté,	ſtia,	be thou, or ſtand thou, &c.
	eſtémos,	ſtiámo,	
	eſtád,	ſtáte,	
	eſtén.	ſtiano.	

Subiunctiue mode

	Spaniſh.		Italian.		Latin.	
Preſ. Como	Eſté,	Quando	Stia,	Cum	Stem, &c.	When I am or ſtand, &c.
	Eſtés,		Stÿ,			
	Eſté,		Stia,			
	Eſtémos,		Stiámo,			
	Eſtéys,		Stiáte,			
	Eſtén.		Stiano.			
Imperfect. Como	Eſtuviéra, eſtaría, eſtuviéſſe,	Quando	Starei, ſtéſſi, ſtaría,	Cum	Starem, &c.	when I ſtude or was, &c.
	Eſtuviéras, eſtarías, eſtuviéſſes,		Staréſti, ſtéſſi,			
	Eſtuviéra, eſtaría, eſtuviéſſe,		Starébbe, ſtéſſe, ſtaría,			
	Eſtuviéramos, eſtaríamos, eſtuviéſſemos,		Starémo, ſtéſſimo,			
	Eſtuviérades, eſtaríades, eſtuviéſſedes,		Staréſte, ſtéſte,			
	Eſtuviéran, eſtarían, eſtuviéſſen.		ſtarébbono, ſtaríano, ſtéſſero.			
Perfect. Como	A'ya,	eſtádo. Quãdo	Sia,	Stato.	Steterim &c.	when I haue ſtood or bene, &c.
	áyas,		Sÿ,			
	áya,		Sia,			
	Ayámos,		Siámo,	Stati.		
	Ayáys,		Siáte,			
	áyan,		Siáno,			

uviéra,

pluper Como

uviéra, oz uviéſſe,
uviéras, oz uviéſſes,
uviéra, oz uviéſſe,
uviéramos, oz uviéſſemos,
uviérades, oz uviéſſedes,
uviéran, oz uviéſſen,

eſtádo. Quãdo

Foſſi, Foſſi, Foſſe, } Státo.
Fóſſimo, Fóſſte, Fóſſero. } Stati.

Cum ſtetiſſem &c. when I had bæne, oz ſtood, &c

First Futur Como

Eſtuviére,
Eſtuviéres,
Eſtuviére,
Eſtuviéremos,
Eſtuviéredes,
Eſtuviéren,

Quando

Saró, Saráí, Sará, } Státo.
Sarémo, Saréte, Saránno, } Stati.

Cum Stetero, &c. when I ſhal oz wil ſtand oz be &c.

ſecond Futur Como

uviére, oz avré,
uviéres, oz avrás,
uviére, oz avrá,
uviéremos, oz avrémos,
uviéredes, oz avréys,
uviéren, oz avrán,

Eſtádo.

Saró, Saráí, Sará, } Státo.
Sarémo, Saréte, Saránno, } Stati.

Cum Stetero, &c. when I ſhal oz wil be oz ſtand &c.

Infinitiue mode Preſent.

Eſtár,] *Stare*,] *Stare*,] to Stand oz be.

Preterperfect.

avér Eſtádo,] *hauer Státo*,] *Stetiſſe*,] to haue Stood oz bæne.

Future tenſe.

avér oz eſperár d'eſtár, { *douer Stare*, *eſſer per Stare*, } *Staturum eſſe*, to Stand hereafter.

Gerund.

Eſtándo,] *Stando*,] *Stando*,] In Standing oz being.

Participle.

Eſtádo,] *Stato*,] *Status*,] Stoode oz bæne.

These Verbes following make their Preſent tenſe of the Indicatiue, by changing the laſt ſillable ſaue one of the Infinitiue the e into ie, and the o into ue, as

Infinitiue.	Preſ.	Preterperfect.
Aſſentár, to ſit, to ſet,	yo aſſiénto,	Aſſenté.
Approvár, to allow,	yo appruévo,	Aprové.
Sentár, to ſit,	yo ſiénto,	Senté,
Sonár, to ſound,	yo ſuéno,	Soné,
Conſervár, to keepe,	yo conſiérvo,	Conſervé.
Atronár, to thunder,	yo atruéno,	Attroné.
Cegár, to make blinde,	yo ciégo,	Ciegué.
Contár, to reckon,	yo cuénto,	Conté.
Cerrár, to ſhut, to locke,	yo ciérro,	Cerré.
Degollár, to kill, to behead,	yo deguéllo,	Degollé.
Enterrár, to put in the earth,	yo entiérro,	Enterré.
Derrocár, to throwe downe,	yo deruéco,	derroqué.
Colgár, to hang,	yo cuélgo,	Colgué.
Deſterrár, to baniſh,	yo deſtiérro,	Deſterré.
Deſſollár, to paunch,	yo deſuéllo,	Deſollé.
Hollár, to tread on,	yo huéllo,	Hollé.
Enteſár, to bend,	yo entiéſo,	Enteſé.
Segár, to cut,	yo ſiégo,	Sequé.
Reſollár, to breath,	yo reſuéllo,	Reſollé.
Reſolgár, *idem*,	yo reſuélgo,	Reſolgué.
Temblár, to tremble,	yo tiémblo,	Temblé.
Tentár, to aſſaie,	yo tiénto,	Tenté.
Tropeçár, to ſtumble,	yo tropiéço,	Tropecé.
Adereçár, to make readie,	yo adereſço,	Adereſcé.

of

Of Verbes Irregular of the first Coniugation in AR, *as* ANDAR, In Italian, *Andare*, in Latin, *Ire*, *Gradi*, to Goe.

ANDAR

Indicatiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Present.	A'ndo,	*Vo, & Vado,*	*Eo,*	I Goe,
	ándas,	*Vai,*	*is, &c.*	thou Goest, &c.
	ánda,	*Va,*		
	Andámos,	*Andiámo,*		
	andáys,	*Andáte,*		
	ándan.	*Vánno.*		
Imperfect.	Andáva,	*Andáua,*	*Ibam, &c.*	I did Goe, &c.
	Andávas,	*Andáui,*		
	Andáva,	*Andáua,*		
	Andávamos,	*Andauámo,*		
	Andávades,	*Andauáte,*		
	Andávan.	*Andáuano.*		
First Perfect.	Andúve,	*Andái,*	*Iui, &c.*	I haue Gone, &c.
	Anduvíste,	*Andásti,*		
	Andúvo,	*Andó,*		
	Anduvímos,	*Andámmo,*		
	Anduvístes,	*Andáste,*		
	Anduviéron.	*Andárono.*		

Second Perfect.	He,	Andádo.	*Sono,*	*Andáto.*	*Iui, &c. vt suprá.*	I haue Gone, &c. as before.
	as,		*Séi,*			
	a,		*é,*			
	Hémos,		*Siámo,*	*Andati.*		
	avéys,		*Séte,*			
	án,		*Sono,*			
Pluperfect.	Avía,	Andádo.	*E'ra,*	*Andato.*	*Iueram, &c.*	I had Gone, &c.
	Avías,		*éri,*			
	Avía,		*éra,*			
	Avíamos,		*Erauámo,*	*Andati.*		
	Avíades,		*erauáte,*			
	Avían,		*érano.*			

Future.	Andaré,	*Anderó, andró,*	*Ibo, &c.*	I shall or will Goe, &c.
	Andarás,	*Anderái, andrai,*		
	Andará,	*Anderá, andrá,*		
	Andarémos,	*Anderémo, andrémo,*		
	Andaréys,	*Anderéte, Andréte,*		
	Andarán.	*Anderánno, andránno.*		

Imperatiue mode

A'nda tu,	*Va tu,*	*Ito, &c.*	Goe thou, &c.
ánde aquel,	*Vada, or vada colui,*		
Andémos,	*Andiámo,*		
Andád,	*Andáte,*		
ánden.	*Vádano, or vádino.*		

ANDAR. *Of Verbes Irregular the first Coniugation in* AR.

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.
Pret. Como	ánde, ándes, ánde, andémos, andéys, ánden.	Quando váda, vádi, vadv, vadi, váda, vadi, andiámo, andiáte, vádano, vádino.	Cum Eam, &c. When I doe go, &c.
Imperfect Como	anduviéra, andaría, anduviésse, anduviéras, andarias, anduviésses, anduviéra, andaría, anduviésse, Anduviéramos, andaríamos, anduviéssemos, anduviérades, andariades, anduviéssedes, anduviéran, andarian, anduviéssen.	Quando andássi andarei, anderia, andássi, anderésti, andásse, anderibbe, anderia, andássimo, anderémo, andáste, anderéste, andássero, anderébbero, anderiano.	Cum irem, &c. When I did go, &c.
perfect. Como	áya, áyas, áya, áyamos, ayays, áyan, andádo.	Quando sia, sii, sia, Andato. siamo, siate, siáno, Andati.	Cum iuerim, &c. When I haue gone, &c.
pluperfect tēse Como	uviéra, oꝛ uviésses, uviéra, oꝛ uviésses, uviéra, oꝛ uviésse, uviéramos, oꝛ uviéssemos uviérades, oꝛ uviéssedes, uviéran, oꝛ uviéssen, andádo.	Quando fóssi, sarei, fóssi, saréssi, fosse, sarébbe, Andato. fossimo, saremmo, fóste, saréste, fóssero, sarébbero, Andati.	Cum iuissem, &c. When I had gone, &c.
Futur Como	anduviére, anduviéres, anduviére, anduviéremos, anduviéredes, anduviéren.	Quando saró, sarái, sará, Andato. sarémo, saréte, saránno, Andati.	Cum iuero, &c. When I shall oꝛ will goe hereafter, &c.

Infinitiue mode Present tense.

ANDA'R,] *Andare,*] *Ire,*] to goe.

Preterperfect tense.

Avér andádo,] *Essere andáto,*] *Iuisse,*] to haue gone.

Future tense.

Avér oꝛ esperár de andár, { *Esser per andare, Douer andare, Hauer ad andare.* } *Iturum esse,* } to go, oꝛ about to go.

Gerund.

Andándo,] *Andándo,*] *Eundo,*] in going.

Participle of the Present tense and Active voice.

El que ánda,] *Andánte,*] *Euntis,*] one going.

Participle of the Preter and Passiue voice.

Andádo,] *Andato,*] gone.

of

Of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Conjugation in ER, *as* Traér, Sabér, Tenér, Podér, Querér, Ponér, Hazér, Cabér.

TRAER

Indicatiue mode.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pzeſ.	yo TRA'YGO,	io APPORTO,	Adduco, &c.	I fetch oz bzing, &c.
	tu tráes,	tu appórti,		
	aquel tráe,	colui appórta,		
	traémos,	apportiámo,		
	traéys,	apportáte,		
	trácn.	appórtano.		
Imper.	Traýa,	apportáua,	Adduceham, &c.	I did fetch oz bzing, &c.
	traýas,	apportáui,		
	traýa,	apportáua,		
	traýamos,	apportauámo,		
	traýades,	apportanáte,		
	traýan,	apportáuano.		
Firſt Perf.	trúxe, oz tráxe,	apportái,	Adduxi, &c.	I haue fetcht oz bought, &c.
	truxiſte, oz traxiſte,	apportáſte,		
	trúxo, oz tráxo,	apportó,		
	truxímos, oz traxímos,	apportámmo,		
	truxíſtes, oz traxíſtes,	apportáſte,		
	truxéron, oz traxéron,	apportáron, apportáro, apportár.		
ſecond Perf.	hé, ó Vbaſt as, &c. Vbiſ traýdo.	ho, hai, &c. apportáto.	Adduxi, &c.	I haue fetcht oz bzought, &c.
Plu-perfect.	avía, avías, &c. traýdo.	hauéua, hauéui, &c. Apportáto.	Adduxeram, &c.	I had fetcht oz bought, &c.
Futur	traeré,	apportaró,	Adducam, &c.	I ſhall oz ſwill fetch oz bzing, &c.
	traerás,	apportarái,		
	traerá,	apportará,		
	traerémos,	apportarémo,		
	traeréys,	apportaréte,		
	traerán,	apportarámo.		

yo he o hugo
tu as o thou
2. future

Imperatiue mode.

Impa ratiue mode.	Tráe tu,	Apporta tu,	Adduc, adducito.	Bzing oz fetch thou, &c.
	tráyga aquel.	apporti colui,		
	~~traémos~~, traygámos	apportámo,		
	traéd,	apportáte,		
	tráygan,	apportino,		

Of

TRAER *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in* ER, *as* TRAER, *in Italian Apportare, Arrecare, Trahere, Addurere, Menare,* in Latin *Adducere, Afferre, Trahere,* to Fetch, to Bring, to Carrie, to Drawe.

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	Tráyga or Tráya, Tráygas or Tráyas, &c. Tráyga, or Tráya, Traygámos, Traygáys, Tráygan.	Quando	*Apporti,* *Apporti,* *Apporti,* *Apportiámo,* *Apportiáte,* *Appórtino.*	Cum	*Adducam, &c.*	When I doe fetch, or bring, &c.
Imperfect. Como	Truxéra, Traería, Truxésse, Truxéras, Traerias, Truxésses, Truxéra, Traería, Truxésse. Truxéramos, Traeríamos, Truxéssemos Truxérades, Traeríades, Truxéssedes, Truxéran, Traerían, Truxéssen.	Quando	*Apportaréi* or *Apportássi,* *Aportarésti* or *Apportássi,* *Apportarébbe* or *Apportásse.* *Apportarémmo* or *Aportássimo* *Apportaréste* or *Apportáste,* *Apportarébbono* or *Apportássero*	Cum	*Adducerem, &c.*	When I did fetch or bring, &c.
	you shal find in some authors Traxésse, Traxésses, &c.					
perfect. Como	áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan. } Traýdo.	Quando	*Habbia,* *Habbi,* *Hábbia,* *Habbiámo,* *Habbiáte,* *Hábbiano,* } *Apportato.*	Cum	*Adduxerim, &c.*	When I haue fetched or brought, &c.
pluperfect. Como	uviéra or uviésse, uviéras or uviésses, uviéra or uviésse, uviéramos or uviéssemos, uviérades or uviéssedes, uviéran or uviéssen, } Traýdo.	Quando	*Hauerei* or *Hauéssi,* *Hauerésti* or *Hauéssi,* *Hauerébbe* or *Hauésse,* *Hauerémmo* or *Hauéssimo,* *Hauerésté* or *Hauéste,* *Hauerébbono* or *Hauéssero* } *Apportáto.*	Cum	*Adduxissem, &c.*	When I had brought or fetched, &c.
Futur. Como	Truxére, Truxéres, Truxére. Truxéremos, Truxéredes, Truxéren.	Quando	*Haueró* *Hauerái* *Hauerá* *Hauerémo* *Hauerére* *Haueránno* } *Apportáto.*	Cum	*Adduxero, &c.*	When I shall bring or fetch, &c.

Infinitiue moode Present tense.

TRAER] *Apportare*] *Adducere,*] to Bring, to Fetch.

Preterperfect tense.

Avér Traýdo,] *Hauer Apportato,*] *Adduxisse,*] to haue brought.

Future tense.

Avér or Esperár de traér, { *Douer Apportare,* / *Hauer ad Apportare,* / *Essere per Apportare.* } *Adducturum esse,*] to bring hereafter.

Gerund.

Trayéndo,] *Apportando,*] *Adducendo,*] in bringing or fetching.

Participle of the Actiue and Present tense.

El que tráe,] *Apportante,*] *Adducens,*] one bringing.

Participle of the Passiue and Preter tense.

Traýdo,] *Apportato,*] *Adductus,*] brought.

Participle of the Future tense.

el que ha or espéra de Traér, { *Douendo Apportare,* / *Essendo per Apportare,* } *Adducturus,* } About to bring or fetch.

Thes

These Verbes following ending in cer, make their Present tense of the Indicatiue by adding an ſ before c, thus,

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Preter.
Acaecér, to happen,	yo acaéſco,	Acaecý.
Acontecér, idem,	yo acontéſco,	Acontecí.
Adoleſcér, to be ſorie or ſicke,	yo adoléſco,	Adolecí.
Agradeſcér, to giue thankes,	yo agradéſco,	Agradecý,
Amortecér, to ſwoune,	yo amortéſco,	Amortecí.
Deſtallecér, idem,	yo deſtalléſco,	Deſtallecý.
Apetecér, to deſire,	yo apetéſco,	Apetecý.
Crecér, to growe,	yo créſco,	Crecí.
Encallecér, to waxe hard as brawne.	yo encalléſco,	Encallecí.
Encarecér, to augment,	yo encaréſco,	Encarecí.
Empecér, to hinder,	yo empéſco,	Empecí.
Eſtablecér, to eſtabliſh,	yo eſtabléſco,	Eſtablecí.
Fenecér, to finiſh,	yo fenéſco,	Fenecí.
Pacér, to fæde,	yo páſco,	Pací.
Perecér, to periſh,	yo peréſco,	Perecý.

Except.

Vencér, to ouercome,	yo venço,	Vencí.

In all other moodes and Tenſes they are declined like the Verbes Regular of the ſecond Conjugation in ER.

These in ger, make their Present of the Indicatiue by changing g into j, which the Spaniards in writing do much vſe, setting downe the one for the other, as wel in Nounes as in Verbes, as in Nounes Mageſtad, Majeſtad: Menſaje, Menſage, and the like.

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Preter.
Encogér, to withdraw,	yo encójo,	Encogi.
Recogér, to gather vp or retire	yo recójo,	Recogi.
Acogér, to entertaine,	yo acójo,	Acogý.
Eſcogér, to chooſe out,	yo eſcójo,	Eſcogý.
Cogér, to gather,	yo cójo,	Cogý.
Vngir, to annoint,	yo únjo,	Vngi.

In other moodes and Tenſes like the Regulars.

These make their Present tense of the Indicatiue by adding i in the last syllable saue one of the Infinitiue, as

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Preter.
Defender, to defend,	yo defiéndo,	Defendi.
Dehendér, to cleaue asunder.	yo dehiéndo,	Dehendi.

And these make the Present tense by turning o in the last syllable saue one of the Infinitiue into ue, as

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Pret.
Bolvér, to turne,	yo buélvo,	Bolví.
Rebolvér, to returne,	yo rebuélvo,	Rebolví.
Solér, to be wont,	yo ſuélo,	Solí.
Coſér, to ſowe,	yo cuéſo,	Coſý.
Cozér, to ſcathe,	yo cuézo,	Cozí.
Dolér, to be ſorie, to grieue;	yo duélo,	Dolí,

And these following thus,

Caér, to fall,	yo cáygo,	Caý.
Roér, to gnawe,	yo róygo,	Roý.
Valér, to be worth,	yo válgo,	Valí.
Traér, to fetch or bring,	yo tráygo,	Trúxe.
Oýr, to heare,	yo óygo,	Oý.

In other Moodes and Tenſes like the Regular Verbes.

In like manner thorow all Moodes and Tenſes are his Compounds declined, as Retraér, to withdraw, yo Retráygo, I do withdraw, Retrúxe, I haue withdrawen, &c.

of

SABER *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in* ER, *as* SABER, *in Italian Sapere,* Latin *Scire, Sapere,* to Knowe.

Caro ith bene sapit. } Sapere

Indicatiue mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	yo SE', tu Sábes, aquel Sábe.	*Io So, tu Sái, colui Sa.*	*Scio, Scis, &c.*	I knowe, thou knowest.
	Sabémos, Sabéys, Sáben.	*Sappiámo, Sapéte, Sánno.*		
Imperfect.	Sabía, Sabias, Sabía.	*Sapéua, Sapéui, Sapéua.*	*Sciebam, &c.*	I did knowe, &c.
	Sabíamos, Sabíades, Sabían.	*Sapeuámo, Sapeuáte, Sapéuano.*		
First Perf.	Súpe, Supiste, Súpo.	*Séppi, Sappésti, Séppe.*	*Sciui, &c.*	I haue knowen, &c.
	Supímos, Supístes, Supiéron.	*Sappémmo, Sappéste, Séppero.*		
second perfect.	He o Hue, as o Huiste, a, Hémos, avéys, án } Sabído.	*Ho, Hai, Ha, Habbiámo, Hauéte, Hánno* } *Saputo.*	*Sciui, &c. vt ante.*	I haue knowen, &c. as aboue.
Pluperfect.	Avía, Avías, Avía, Avíamos, Avíades, Avían } Sabído.	*Hauéua, Hauéui, Hauéua, Haueuamo, Hauéuate, Hauéuano* } *Saputo.*	*Sciueram, &c.*	I had knowen, &c.
Futur.	Sabré, Sabrás, Sabrá.	*Soppró, Sapprái, Sapprá.*	*Sciam, &c.*	I shal or will know &c.
	Sabrémos, Sabréys, Sabrán.	*Sapprémo, Sappréte, Sappránno.*		

yo he o tengo, tu as o tienes } de saber } 2. future

Imperatiue mode

Sábe tu, Sepa aquel.	*Sappi tu, Sappia colui.*	*Sci, Scito, &c.*	Know thou, &c.
Sepámos, Sabéd, Sépan.	*Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sáppiano.*		

Declining

Declining of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Coniugation in ER, *as* SABER.

SABER.

Subiunctiue mode

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Preſ. Como	SE'PA, Sépas, Sépa, Sepámos, Sepáys, Sépan.	Quando	SAPPIA, Sappi, Sappia, Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sáppiano.	Cum	Sciam, &c.	when I doe knowe, &c.
Imperfect. Como	Supiéra, ſabría, ſupiéſſe, Supiéras, ſabrías, ſupiéſſes, Supiéra, ſabria, ſupiéſſe, Supiéramos, ſabríamos, ſupiéſſemos, Supiérades, ſabriades, ſupiéſſedes, Supiéran, ſabrian, ſupiéſſen.	Quando	Saprei, ſapéſſi, Sapréſti, ſapéſſi, Saprébbe, ſapéſſe, Saprémo, ſapéſſimo, Sapréſte, ſapéſſe, Saprébbero, ſapéſſero.	Cum	Scirem, &c.	when I did knowe, &c.
Perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	Quando Sabído. Supído ruſtica	Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano,	Saputo.	Cum Scuerim, &c.	when I haue knowne, &c.
Pluperfe. Como	Uviéra, oz uvieſſe, uviéras, oz uvieſſes, uviéra, oz uvieſſe, uviéramos, oz uvieſſemos, uviérades, oz uvieſſeds. uviéran, oz uvieſſen,	Quando Sabído.	Haverei, hauéſſi, Haveréſti, hauéſti, Haverébbe, hauéſſe, Haverémo, hauéſſimo, Haveréte, hauéſte, Haverébbono, hauéſſero,	Saputo.	Cum Sciuiſſem, &c.	when I had knowne, &c.
First Future Como	Supiére, Supiéres, Supiére, Supiéremos, Supiéredes, Supiéren.	Quando	Hauero, Haueráy, Haueráy, Haverémo, Haveréte, haueránno,	Saputo.	Cum Sciuero, &c.	when I ſhal knowe, &c.
Second Future Como	Uviére, oz avré, uviéres, oz avrás, uviére, oz avrá, uviéremos, oz avrémos, uviéredes, oz avréys, uviéren, oz aurán.	Quando Sabído.	Haueró, Haueráy, Haueráy, Haverémo, Haveréte, haueránno,	Saputo.	Cum Sciuero, &c. wantea.	when I ſhall knowe, &c.

Infinitiue mode Preſent tenſe.

SABE'R] *Sapére,*] *Scire,*] to knowe.

Preterpefect tenſe.

avér Sabido,] *haver Saputo,*] *Sciuiſſe,*] to haue knowne.

Future tenſe.

Other: avér oz eſperár de Sabér, } *Douer ſapére, Haver a ſapére, Eſſere per ſapére,* } *Sciturum eſſe,*] to knowe hereafter.

Gerund.

SABER *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in* ER, *as* SABER, *in Italian* *Sapere*, **Latin** *Scire, Sapere*, **to Knowe.**

Indicatiue mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pret.	yo SE',	Io So,	Scio,	I knowe,
	tu Sábes,	tu Sái,	Scis, &c.	thou knowest.
	aquel Sábe.	colui Sa.		
	Sabémos,	Sappiámo,		
	Sabéys,	Sapéte,		
	Sáben.	Sánno.		
Imperfect.	Sabía,	Sapéua,	Sciebam, &c.	I did knowe, &c.
	Sabías,	Sapéui,		
	Sabía.	Sapéua.		
	Sabíamos,	Sapeuámo,		
	Sabíades,	Sapeuáte,		
	Sabían.	Sapéuano.		
First Perf.	Súpe,	Séppi,	Scimi, &c.	I haue knowen, &c.
	Supíste,	Sappésti,		
	Súpo.	Seppe.		
	Supímos,	Sappémmo,		
	Supístes,	Sappéste,		
	Supiéron.	Séppero.		
second perfect.	He / as / a / Hémos / avéys / án } Sabído.	Ho / Hai / Ha / Habbiámo / Hauéte / Hánno } Saputo.	Sciui, &c. Nunc.	I haue knowen, &c. ag aboue.
Pluperfect.	Avía / Avías / Avía / Avíamos / Avíades / Avían } Sabído.	Hauéua / Hauéui / Haucua / Haueuamo / Haucuate / Hauéuano } Saputo.	Sciueram, &c.	I had knowen, &c.
Futur.	Sabré,	Soppró,	Sciam, &c.	I shal or will know
	Sabrás,	Sapprái,		&c.
	Sabrá.	Sapprá.		
	Sabrémos,	Sapprémo,		
	Sabréys,	Sappréte,		
	Sabrán.	Sappránno.		

Imperatiue mode

Sábe tu,	Sappi tu,	Sci, Scito, &c.	Know thou, &c.
Sepa aquel.	Sappia colui.		
Sepámos,	Sappiámo,		
Sabéd,	Sappiáte,		
Sépan.	Sáppiano.		

Declining

Declining of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, *as* SABER.

SABER.

Subiunctiue moode

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	SE'PA, Sépas, Sépa, Sepámos, Sepáys, Sépan.	Quando	*SAPPIA, Sappi, Sappia, Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sáppiano.*	Cum	*Sciam, &c.*	when I doe knowe, &c.
Imperfec. Como	Supiéra, sabría, supiésse, Supiéras, sabrías, supiésses, Supiéra, sabría, supiésse, Supiéramos, sabríamos, supiéssemos, Supiérades, sabríades, supiéssedes, Supiéran, sabrían, supiéssen.	Quando	*Saprei, sapéssi, Sapréſti, sapéssi, Saprébbe, sapésse, Saprémo, sapéssimo, Sapréste, sapéste, Saprébbero, sapéssero.*	Cum	*Scirem, &c.*	when I did knowe, &c.
Perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	Sabído.	*Quando Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano,*	*Saputo.*	*Cum Sciuerim, &c.*	when I haue knowne, &c.
Pluperfe. Como	Uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes. uviéran, or uviéssen,	Sabído.	*Quando Hauerei, hauéssi, Hauerésti, hauésti, Hauerébbe, hauesse, Hauerémo, hauéssimo, Haueréte, hauéste, Hauerébbono, hauéssero,*	*Sapúto.*	*Cum Sciuissem, &c.*	when I had knowne, &c.
First Future Como	Supiére, Supiéres, Supiére, Supiéremos, Supiéredes, Supiéren.	Quando	*Hauero, Hauerái, Hauerá, Hauerémo, Haueréte, haueránno,*	*Sapúto.*	*Cum Sciuero, &c.*	when I shal knowe, &c.
Second Future Como	Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or aurán.	Sabído.	*Quando Haueró, Hauerái, Hauerá, Hauerémo, Haueréte, haueránno,*	*Sapúto.*	*Cum Sciuero, &c. vt antea.*	when I shall knowe, &c.

Infinitiue moode Present tense.

SABE'R] *Sapére,*] *Scire,*] to knowe.

Preterpefect tense.

avér Sabído,] *hauer Sapúto,*] *Sciuisse,*] to haue knowne.

Future tense.

avér or esperár de Sabér, } *Douer sapére, Hauer a sapére, Essere per sapére,* } *Sciturum esse,*] to knowe hereafter.

Gerund.

Gerund.

Sabiéndo,]	*Sapendo,*]	*Sciendo,*]	In knowing.

Participle of the Present, and Active.

el que Sábe,]	*quello chi Sa,*]	*Scies,*]	one knowing.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passiue.

Sabído,]	*Saputo,*]	knowen.

Declining of Verbes Irregular of the second Coniugation in ER, *as* TENER, TENER.
In Italian, and Latin, *Tenére*, to Hold.

Indicatiue mode

Present.	YO TE'NGO,	*IO TE'NGO,*	*Teneo,* &c.	I do Hold, &c.
	tu Tiénes,	*tu Tiéni,*		
	aquél Tiéne,	*colui Tiéne,*		
	Tenémos,	*Teniámo,*		
	Tenéys,	*Teníte,*		
	Tiénen,	*Tíngono.*		
Imperfe.	Tenía,	*Tenína,* & *tenéa,*	*Tenebam,* &c.	I did Hold, &c.
	Tenías,	*Tenéui,*		
	Tenía,	*Tenína,* & *tenéa,*		
	Teníamos,	*Teneuámo,*		
	Teníades,	*Teneuáte,*		
	Tenían.	*Teníano.*		
First Perfect.	Túve,	*Tenni,*	*Tenui,* &c.	I haue Held, &c.
	Tuviſte,	*Teneſti,*		
	Túvo,	*Ténne,*		
	Tuvímos,	*Tennémmo,*		
	Tuviſtes,	*Teneſte,*		
	Tuviéron.	*Ténnero.*		
Second Perfect.	Yo He,	*Ho,*	*Tenui,* &c.	I haue Held, &c. as next above.
	Tu as,	*Hai,*		
	aquel á,	*Ha,*		
	Hémos,	*Habbiámo,*		
	avéys,	*Haéte,*		
	án,	*Hánno.*		
	} Tenído.	} *Tenúto.*		
Pluperfe.	Avía,	*Hanína,*	*Teneram,* &c.	I had Held, &c.
	Avías,	*Haníui,*		
	Avía,	*Hanína,*		
	Avíamos,	*Haueníno,*		
	Avíades,	*Haueníte,*		
	Avían.	*Haníano,*		
	} Tenído.	} *Tenúto.*		
Future.	Tendré, or Terné,	*Tenneró,* & *Terró,*	*Tenebo,* &c.	I shall or will Hold, &c.
	Tendrás, or Ternás,	*Tenneráy,* & *Terráy,*		
	Tendrá, or Terná,	*Tenerá,* & *Terra,*		
	Tendrémos, or Ternémos,	*Teneréno,* & *Terréno,*		
	Tendréys, or Terneys,	*Teneréte,* & *Terréte,*		
	Tendrán, or ternán,	*Tenneránno,* & *Terránno,*		

Imperatiue

Imperatiue moode

Tén tu,	*Tiéni tu,*	*Tene tu,*	Hold thou, &c.
Ténga aquél,	*Ténga colui,*	*&c.*	
Tengámos,	*Teniámo,*		
Tenéd,	*Tenéte,*		
Téngan.	*Téngano.*		

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como	Ténga,	*Tenga,*	*Teneam, &c.*	When I dos hold, &c.
	Téngas,	*Tenghi,*		
	Ténga,	*Tenga,*		
	Tengámos,	*Teniámo,*		
	Tengáys,	*Teniáte,*		
	Téngan.	*Téngano.*		
Imperfect. Como	Tuviéra, ternía, tuviésse,	*Tenéssi, teneréi, tenería,*	*Tenerem, &c.*	When I did hold, &c.
	Tuviéras, ternías, tuviésses,	*Tenéssi, teneréſti,*		
	Tuviéra, ternía, tuviésse.	*Tenésse, tenerébbe, tenería,*		
	Tuviéramos, terníamos, tuviéssemos,	*Tenéssimo, tenerémmo,*		
	Tuviérades, terníades, tuviéssedes,	*Tenéste, teneréste,*		
	Tuviéran, ternían, tuviéssen.	*Tenéssero, tenerébbono.*		
perfect. Como	áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan, } Tenído.	*Habbia, Habbi, Hábbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano,* } *Tenúto.*	*Tenuerim, &c.*	When I haue holden, &c.
pluperfect. Como	uviéra or uviésse,	*Quando* *Hauerei or Hauéssi,*	*Cum* *Tenuissem, &c.*	When I had holden, &c.
	uviéras or uviésses,	*Haueresti or Hauéssi,*		
	uviéra or uviésse,	*Hauerébbe or Hauésse,*		
	uviéramos or uviéssemos,	*Hauerémmo or Hauéssimo,*		
	uviérades or uviéssedes,	*Haueréste or Hauéste,*		
	uviéran or uviéssen, } Tenído.	*Hauerébbono or Hauéssero* } *Tenúto.*		
First Futur. Como	Tuviére,		*Tenuero, &c.*	When I shall or wil hold, &c.
	Tuviéres,			
	Tuviére,			
	Tuviéremos,			
	Tuviéredes,			
	Tuviéren.			
Secōd Futur. Como	uviére or avré,	*Haueró*	*Tenuero, &c. vt antè.*	When I shall or wil hold, &c. as next aboue.
	uviéres or avrás,	*Hauerái*		
	uviére or avrá,	*Hauerá*		
	uviéremos or avrémos,	*Hauerémo*		
	uviéredes or avréys,	*Haueréte*		
	uviéren or avrán, } Tenído.	*Haueránno* } *Tenúto.*		

Infinitiue moode Present tense.

TENER,] *Tenére,*] *Tenere,*] to Hold.

Preterperfect tense.

Aver Tenído,] *Hauér Tenúto,*] *Tenuisse,*] to haue Holden.

Future tense.

Avér de Tenér, { *Douér tenére,* / *Hauér a tenére,* / *Essere per tenére,* } *Tenturum esse,*] to Hold hereafter.

Gerund.

Teniéndo,] *Tenéndo,*] *Tenendo,*] In Holding.

Participle of the Present and Active.

El que tiéne,] *Ténente,*] *Tenens,*] one Holding.

Participle of the Preter and Passive.

Tenído,] *Tenúto,*] *Tentus,*] Holden.

Like this verbe simple are his Compounds in all points declined thorow all Modes and Tenses, as Mantenér, to maintaine, yo Manténgo, Mantúve. Detenér, to detaine or stay, yo Deténgo, Detúve. Retenér, to withhold or retaine, yo Reténgo, Retúve. Soſtenér, to sustaine or vphold, yo Soſténgo, Sustúve.

PODER

The second Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in ER, *as* PODER, in Italian *Potere*, in Latin *Posse*, to be able.

Indicatiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	yo PUEDO,	*POSSO,*	*Possum, &c.*	I can or am able, &c.
	tu Puédes,	*Puoi,*		
	aquel Puéde.	*Puo.*		
	Podémos,	*Possiámo,*		
	Podéys,	*Potéte,*		
	Puéden.	*Póssano & Pónno.*		
Imperfect	Podía,	*Poteúa or Potéa,*	*Poteram, &c.*	I was able, &c.
	Podías,	*Poteúi,*		
	Podía,	*Poteúa or Potéa,*		
	Podíamos,	*Poteuámo,*		
	Podíades,	*Poteuáte,*		
	Podían.	*Poteúano.*		
First perfect.	Púde,	*Potei,*	*Potui, &c.*	I could or haue been able, &c.
	Pudíste,	*Potésti,*		
	Púdo.	*Puoté.*		
	Pudímos,	*Potémmo,*		
	Pudístes,	*Potéste,*		
	Pudiéron.	*Potérono & Pótero.*		
Second perfect.	He / as / a	Podído.	*Ho / Hai / Ha*	Potúto.	*Potui, &c. vt supra.*	I could or haue been able, &c. as next above.
	Hémos / avéys / an		*Habbiámo / Haué te / Hanno*			
Pluperf.	Avía / Avías / Avía	Podído.	*Haueúa / Haueúo / Haueúa*	Potúto.	*Poteram, &c.*	I had been able, &c.
	Avíamos / Avíades / Avían		*Haueuámo / Haueuáte / Haueuáno*			
Future.	Podré,		*Potró,*		*Potero, &c.*	I shall or will be able, &c.
	Podrás,		*Potrái,*			
	Podrá.		*Potrá,*			
	Podrémos,		*Potréme,*			
	Podréys,		*Potréte,*			
	Podrán.		*Potránno.*			

Imperatiue mode wanteth as in the Latin.

Of

Of Verbes Irregular, the second Coniugation in ER, *as* PODE'R. PODER

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	Puéda, puédas, puéda, ~~puedámos,~~ podámos podáys, puédan,	Quando	*Possa,* *possi,* *possa,* *possiámo, & potiámo,* *possiáte, & potiáte,* *possano.*	Cum	*Possim, &c.*	When I can or be able, &c.
Imperfect. Como	Pudiéra, podría, pudiésse, pudiéras, podrías, pudiésses, pudiéra, podría, pudiésse, pudiéramos, podríamos, pudiéssemos, pudiérades, podríades, pudiéssedes, pudiéran, podrían, pudiéssen.	Quando	*potéssi, potréi, potría,* *potéssi, potrésti,* *potésse, potrébbe, potría,* *potéssimo, potrémmo,* *potéste, potréste,* *potéssero, potrébbono, potríano,*	Cum	*Possem, &c.*	When I coulde or might be able, &c.
Perf. Como	áya, áyas, áya, áyamos, ayáys, áyan, } Podído.	Quando	*hábbia,* *hábbi,* *hábbia,* *habbiámo,* *habbiáte,* *hábbiano,* } *Potuto.*	Cum	*Potuerim, &c.*	When I haue been able, &c.
Pluperfect. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéra, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen, } Podído.	Quando	*hauéssi, haueréi,* *hauéssi, haueréſti,* *hauésse, hauerébbe,* *hauéssimo, hauerémo,* *hauéste, haueréste,* *hauéssero, hauerébbono,* } *Potúto*	Cum	*Potuissem, &c.*	When I had been able, &c.
First future. Como	Pudiére, pudiéres, pudiére, pudiéremos, pudiéredes, pudiéren.			Cum	*Potuero, &c.*	When I shall be able heereafter, &c.
second Futur. Como	uviére, or avré uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán, } Podído.	Quando	*haueró,* *hauerai,* *hauerá,* *hauerémo,* *haueréte,* *haueránno,* } *Potúto.*	Cum	*Potuero, &c. vt ante.*	When I shall or will be able heer after, &c. as next aboue.

Infinitiue moode Present tense.

Podér,] *Potére,*] *Posse,*] To be able.

Preterperfect tense.

Avér podído,] *Hauer potúto,*] *Potuisse,*] To haue beene able.

Gerund.

Pudiéndo,] *Poténdo,*] In being able.

Participle.

Podído,] *Potúto,*] Able.

Querér. *Of Verbes Irregular of the ſecond Coniugation, in* ER, *as* QVERER, *in Italian*, *Volere*,] *in Latin Velle*,] **To will, to loue, or to be willing.**

Indicatiue mode.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latin.	
Preſ.	yo QVIE'RO,	Io VO'GLIO,	*Volo*,	I will, or loue, &c.
	tu quiéres,	*tu vuoi*,	*Vis*, &c.	
	aquel quiére,	*coluí vuole*,		
	Plu.	Plu.		
	querémos,	*vogliámo*,		
	queréys,	*voléte*,		
	quiéren.	*vógliono*.		
Imper	queria,	*voléua*,	*Volebam*, &c.	I did will, or I did loue, &c.
	querias,	*voléui*,		
	queria,	*voléua*,		
	queriamos,	*voleuámo*,		
	queriades,	*voleuáte*,		
	querian.	*voléuano*.		
First Perf.	quiſe,	*volſi*, & *volſi*,	*Volui*, &c.	I haue willed, or I haue loued, &c.
	quisiſte,	*volleſti*,		
	quiſo,	*volle*, & *volſe*,		
	quisímos,	*volémmo*,		
	quisiſtes,	*volleſte*,		
	quiſiéron.	*vólſero*.		
second Perf.	He, as, a, hémos or avémos, avéys, an,	Querído. *ho, hai, ha, habbiámo, hauéte, hánno,*	*Volúto*	*Volui*, &c. vt ante.	I haue willed, or I haue loued, &c. as next aboue.
Pluperfect.	avía, avías, avía, aviamos, aviades, avían,	Querído. *hauéua, hauéui, hauéua, haueuámo, haueuáte, haueuano,*	*Volúto*	*Volueram*, &c.	I had willed, or I had loued, &c.
Futur	querré, querrás, querrá, querrémos, querréys, querrán.	*vorró, vorrái, vorrá, vorrémo, vorréte, vorránno.*	*volam*, &c.	I will, or ſhall will or loue, &c.

Imperatiue mode.

Imperatiue mode.	quére tu, quera aquél, querámos, queréd, quéran.	*vuoi tu, voglia coláí, vogliámo, vogliate, vogliano,*	Latin wanteth the Imperatiue mode.	will thou or loue thou, &c.

Of Verbes Irregular of the second Coniugation in ER, *as* QVERER.

Querér.

Subiunctiue mode

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pzes. Como	Quéra, oz Quéfra, &c. Quéras, Quéra, Querámos, Queráys, Quéran.	Quando	*Vóglia,* *Vógli,* *Vóglia,* *Vogliámo,* *Vogliáte,* *Vógliano.*	Cum	*Velim, &c.*	When I will oz loue, &c.
Imperfect. Como	Quisiéra, quérria, quisiésse, Quisiéras, querrías, quisiésses, Quisiéra, querría, quisiésse, Quisiéramos, querríamos, quisiéssemos, Quisiérades, querríades, quisiéssedes, Quisiéran, querrían, quisiéssen.	Quando	*Voléssi, verei, & vorría,* *Voléssi, vorrésti,* *Voléssе, vorrébbe, vorría,* *Voléssimo, vorémmo,* *Voléste, voréste,* *Voléssero, vorrébbono, & (vorríano.*	Cum	*Vellem, &c.*	When I would oz did loue, &c.
perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, Ayáys, áyan,	Querído. Quando	*Hábbia,* *Hábbi,* *Hábbia,* *Habbiámo,* *Habbiáte,* *Habbiano,*	*Volúto.* Cum	*Voluerim, &c.*	When I haue willed oz loued, &c.
pluperfect. Como	Uviéra, oz uviésse, uviéras, oz uviésses, uviéra, oz uviésse, uviéramos, oz uviéssemos, uviérades, oz uviéssedes, uviéran, oz uviéssen,	Querído. Quando	*Hauéssi, oz hauerei,* *Haueſti, oz haueréſti,* *Hauésse, oz hauerébbe,* *Hauéssimo, oz haueréмo,* *Haueſte, oz haueréſte,* *Hauéssero, oz hauerébbono,*	*Volúto.* Cum	*Voluiſſem, &c.*	When I had willed oz loued &c.
First Futur Como	Quisiére, Quisiéres, Quisiére, Quisiéremos, Quisiéredes, Quisiéren.	Quando	*Haueró,* *Haueráі,* *Haueрá,* *Haueréмo,* *Haueréte,* *Haueránno,*	*Volúto.* Cum	*Voluero &c.*	When I shall will oz loue.
Second Futur Como	Uviére, oz avré, uviéres, oz avrás, uviére, oz avrá, uviéremos, oz avrémos, uviéredes, oz avréys, uviéren, oz avrán,	Querído. Quando	*Haueró,* *Haueráі,* *Haueрá,* *Haueréмo,* *Haueréte,* *Haueránno,*	*Volúto.* Cum	*Voluero &c. vt ante.*	When I shall be willing oz loue, &c.

Infinitiue mode Pzesent tense.

Querér,] *Volere,*] *Velle,*] to will oz loue.

Pzeterperfect tense.

avér Querído,] *hauer Voluto,*] *Voluiſſe,*] to haue loued oz beene willing.

Gerund.

Queriéndo,] *Volendo,*] *Volendo,*] In being willing oz louing.

Participle.

Querído,] *Voluto,*] loued, willed.

Ad to this verbe this particle Mas, and so decline it thozow al moods and tenses, and it makes the signification to be in Latin *Malo*, in English I had leifer, I would rather, as yo Quiéro mas, in Latin *Malo*, I would leifer, oz loue moze: tu quiéres mas, *Mauis*, thou hadst rather oz louest moze, Pzeterimperfect tense yo Queria mas, I would rather oz loued moze. Pzeterperf. Quiſe mas, &c.

PONER. *Of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Coniugation in* ER, *as* PONER, *in Italian, Ponere, Porre, Mettere, in Latin, Ponere, Locare,* **to Put, to place.**

Indicatiue mode

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latin.	
Preſ.	YO PONGO,	*IO PO'NGO,*	*Pono, &c.*	I doe put, &c.
	tu Pónes,	*tu Póni,*		
	aquél Póne,	*colui Péne,*		
	Plu.	**Plu.**		
	Ponémos,	*Poniámo,*		
	Ponéys,	*Ponéte,*		
	Pónen.	*Póngono,*		
Imperfect.	Ponía,	*Ponéua,*	*Tónebam, &c.*	I did put, &c.
	Ponías,	*Ponéui,*		
	Ponía,	*Ponéua,*		
	Poníamos,	*Ponevámo,*		
	Poníades,	*Poneváte,*		
	Ponían.	*Ponéuano.*		
First Perfect.	Púſe,	*Póſi,*	*Poſui, &c.*	I haue put, &c.
	Puſiſte,	*Ponéſti,*		
	Púſo,	*Póſe,*		
	Puſimos,	*Ponémmo,*		
	Puſiſtes,	*Ponéſte,*		
	Puſiéron.	*Póſero.*		
Second Perfect.	He, / as, / a, / Avémos, y hémos, / Avéys, / an, } Fuéſto.	*Ho, / Hai, / Ha, / Habbiámo, / Hauét e, / Hánno,* } Poſto.	*Poſui, &c.*	I haue put, &c.
Pluperfect	Avía, / Avías, / Avía, / Avíamos, / Avíades, / Avían, } Puéſto.	*Hauéua, / Hauéui, / Hauéua, / Haueuámo, / Haueuáte, / Hauéuano,* } Poſto.	*Poſueram, &c.*	I had put, &c.
Future	Porné, or Pondré, / Pornás, or Pondrás, / Porná, or Pondrá, / Pornémos, or Pondrémos, / Poneys, or Pondréys. / Pornán, or Pondrán.	*Ponerò, & Porrò, / Ponerái, & Porrái, / Ponerá, & Porrá, / Ponerémo, & Porrémo, / Ponerète, & Porrète, / Ponerànno, & Porànno.*	*Ponam, &c.*	I ſhal or will put, &c.

2 future

Imperatiue mode.

Pón tu,	*Pone tu,*	*Pone, Poneto,*	put thou,
Pónga aquél,	*Pónga colui,*	*Ponat, Poneto, &c.*	put he or let him put, &c.
Pongámos,	*Poniámo,*		
Poned,	*Ponéte,*		
Póngan.	*Póngano.*		

Of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Coniugation in ER, *as* PONER. PONER

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pzel. Como	Pónga, Póngas, Pónga. Pongámos, Póngays, Póngan.	Quando	Pónga, Pónghi, Pónga. Poniámo, Poniáte, Póngano.	Cum	Ponam, &c.	When I do put, &c
Imperfect. Como	Puſiéra, pornia or pondría, puſiéſſe, Puſiéras, pornias or pondrias, puſiéſſes, Puſiéra, pornia or pondria, puſiéſſe. Puſiéramos, porniamos or pondríamos, puſiéſſemos Puſiérades, porniades or pondriades, puſiéſſedes, Puſiéran, pornian or pondrian, puſiéſſen.	Quando	Poneſſi, Poneri, Poneſſi, Poneréſti, Poneſſe, Poneríbbe, Poneſſimo, Poneríimmo, Poneſſe, Poneríſte, Poneſſero, Poneríbbono.	Cum	Ponerem, &c.	When I did put, &c
Perf. Como	áya áyas áya ayámos ayáys áyan	Puéſto. Quando	Hábbia Hábbi Hábbia Habbiámo Habbiáte Hábbiano	Póſto. Cum	Poſuerim, &c.	When I haue put, &c.
Pluperfect. Como	uviéra or uviéſſe uviéras or uviéſſes uviéra or uviéſſe uviéramos or uviéſſemos uviéredes or uviéſſedes uviéran or uviéſſen	Puéſto. Quando	Haueres or Haueſſi Haueréſti or Haveſti Haueríbbe or Haveſſe Haueríimmo or haveſſimo Haueréſte or Haveſte Haberébbono or Haveſſero	Póſto. Cum	Poſuiſſem,	When I had put, &c.
First Futur. Como	Puſiére, Puſiéres, Puſiére. Puſiéremos, Puſiéredes. Puſiéren.			Cum	Poſuero, &c.	When I ſhall or will put, &c.
ſecond Futur Como	Uviére or avré uviéres or avrás uviére or avrá uviéremos or avrémos uviéredes or avréys uviéren or avrán,	Puéſto. Quando	Haueró Haueráì Haterá Haueríimo Haueréte Haueránno	Poſto. Cum	Poſuero, &c.	When I ſhall or will put, &c.

Infinitiue mode Pzeſent tenſe.

PONER,] *Ponere, Mettere, Porre,] Ponere,]* to Put.

Pzeterpeſect tenſe.

Avér Puéſto,] *Hauer Poſto,] Poſuiſſe,]* to haue Put.

Gerund.

Poniendo,] *Ponendo,] Ponendo,]* In Putting.

Participle.

Puéſto,] *Poſto,] Poſitus,]* Put.

After this manner are declined in all points Componér, to compoſe, yo Compóngo, I doe compoſe, yo Compúſe, I haue compoſed, &c. Alſo Diſponér, to diſpoſe, yo Diſpongo, I diſpoſe, Diſpúſe, I haue diſpoſed. And Anteponér, to put before, yo Antepongo, I doe put before, Antepúſe, I haue put before. So Proponér, to ſet out, to alleage, yo Propóngo, Propúſe.

Of

HAZER. *Of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Coniugation in* ER, *as* HAZER, *in Italian Fare, in Latin Facere, to doe, to make.*

Indicatiue mode.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latin	
Preſ.	yo HA'GO,	Io FO,	Facio, &c.	I doe make or doe, &c.
	tu Házes,	tu Fai,		
	aquel Háze.	colui Fa.		
	Hazémos,	Facciámo,		
	Hazéis,	Fate,		
	Házen.	Fánno.		
Imperf.	Hazía,	Facéua,	Faciebam, &c.	I did make or doe, &c.
	Hazías,	Facéui,		
	Hazía.	Facéua.		
	Haziamos,	Facenámo,		
	Haziades,	Facenáte,		
	Hazían.	Facénano.		
First perfect.	Hize,	Féci,	Feci, &c.	I haue made or done, &c.
	Hiziſte,	Facéſti,		
	Hizo.	Féce.		
	Hizímos,	Facémmo,		
	Hiziſtes,	Facéſte,		
	Hiziéron.	Fécero.		
Second Perfect.	He o Hauz (Eſpañol antiguo) as o Hauſte a / Hécho.	Ho / Hai / Ha / Fátto.	Feci, &c. nt ante.	I haue made or done, &c.
	Hémos	Habbiámo		
	avéys	Haueſte		
	an	Hánno		
Pluperfect.	Avía / Avías / Avía / Hecho.	Haueua / Haueui / Haueua / Fátto.	Feceram, &c.	I had made or done, &c.
	Aviamos	Haueuámo		
	Aviades	Haueuáte		
	Avían	Haueuano		
Future.	Haré,	Faré,	Faciam, &c.	I ſhall or will make or doe, &c.
	Harás,	Farái,		
	Hará.	Fará.		
	Harémos,	Farémo,		
	Haréys,	Faréte,		
	Harán.	Faránno.		

yo le o hurgo / Vos as o Hemos } de Layr 2. ſubiua

Imperatiue mode.

Ház tu,	Fa tu,	Fac, Facito, &c.	Doe thou, or make thou, &c.
Hága aquel.	Fáccia colui.		
Hagámos,	Facciámo,		
Hazéd,	Fate,		
Hágan.	Fácciano.		

of

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, *as* HAZER.

HAZER

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	Hága, hágas, hága, hagámos, hagáys, hágan.	Quando	*Faccia, facci, faccia, facciamo, facciáte, fácciano.*	Cum	*faciam, &c.*	When I doe make or do, &c.
Imper Como	hiziéra, haría, hiziésse, hiziéras, harías, hiziésses, hiziéra, haría, hiziésse, hiziéramos, haríamos, hiziéssemos, hiziérades, hariades, hiziéssedes, hiziéran, harían, hiziéssen.	Quando	*facessi, farei, faría, facésti, farésti, facésse, farébbe, faría, facéssimo, farémmo, facésti, faréste, facéssero, farebbono, faríano.*	Cum	*Facerem, &c.*	When I did do or make, &c.
Perf. Como	áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan, } Hecho.	Quando	*hábbia, hábbi, hábbia, habbiámo, habbiáte, habbiano,* } Fatto.	Cum	*Fecerim, &c.*	When I haue made or done, &c.
Pluperf. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen, } Hecho.	Quando	*hauerei, or hauessi, hauerésti, or hauésti, hauerébbe, or hauesse, hauerémmo, or hauessimo hauerésti, or hauéste, hauerébbono, or hauessimo* } Fatto.	Cum	*Fecissem, &c.*	When I had made or done, &c.
First future. Como	hiziére, hiziéres, hiziére, hiziéremos, hiziéredes, hiziéren.			Cum	*Fecero, &c.*	When I shall or will make or do, &c.
second Futur. Como	Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán. } Hecho.		*Haueró, Hauerái, Hauerá, Hauerémo, Haueréte, haueránno,* } Fatto.	Cum	*Fecero, &c. vt antè.*	When I shall or wil make or do, &c.

Infinitiue moode Present tense.

Hazér,] *Fare,*] *Facere,* To do, to make.

Preterperfect tense.

Aver hecho,] *Hauer fatto,*] *Fecisse,*] To haue made or done, &c.

Future tense.

Aver or esperar de hazer, { *Douer fare, Esser per fare, Hauer a fáre.* } *Facturum esse vel fore.* { To make or do hereafter.

Gerund.

Haziéndo] *Facendo,*] *Faciendo,*] In doing or making, &c.

Supine

Supine of the Actiue voice.

A Hazér,] *Di fare,*] *Factum,*] To make or do.

Supine of the Passiue voice.

De sér hécho,] *D'esser fatto,*] *Factu,*] To be made or don.

Participle of the Actiue and Present tense.

El que háze,] *Facente,*] *Faciens,*] One doing or making.

Participle of the Passiue and Preter tense.

Hécho] *Fatto,*] *Factus,*] Made or done, &c.

Participle of the Future tense.

El que ha, or Espéra de hazér, { *Hauendo a fare,* / *Essendo per fare,* } *Facturus,*] About to do, &c.

CABER *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in* ER, *as* CABER, *in Italian Capere,*] *Latin Continere & Contineri,*] To containe, or to be contained.

Indicatiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	Yo QVE'PO,	Io CAPISCO,	*Ego contineo,*	Thou containest, &c.
	tu cábes.	*tu capísci,*	*tu continés, &c.*	Thou art contained, &c.
	aquél cábe,	*colui capísce,*	*Ego contineor,*	
			tu continéris, &c.	
	cabémos,	*capiámo,*		
	cabéys,	*capite,*		
	cáben.	*capíscono,*		
Imperfect.	cabía,	*capiua,*	*continebam, &c.*	I did containe, &c.
	cabías,	*capiui,*	*continébar, &c.*	I was contained, &c.
	cabía,	*capiua,*		
	cabíamos,	*capiuámo,*		
	cabíades,	*capiuáte,*		
	cabían.	*capíuano.*		
First Perf.	cúpe,	*capi, or capii,*	*continui, &c.*	I haue contained, &c.
	cupíste,	*capísti,*	*contentus sum vel fui, &c.*	I haue bene contained. &c.
	cúpo,	*capé*		
	cupímos,	*capímmo,*		
	cupístes,	*capíste,*		
	cupiéron.	*capírono,*		
Second Perf.	he / as / a / avémos / avéys / an } Cabído.	*Ho, Hai, Ha, Habbiámo, Hauéte, Hánno,* } *Capíto.*	*continui, &c.* *contentus sum vel fui, &c.*	I haue contained, &c. I haue bene contained, &c.
Pluperfect.	avía / avías / avía / avíamos, / aviades / avían } Cabído.	*Hauéua, Hauéui, Hauéua, Haueuámo, Haueuáte, Hauéuano,* } *Capíto.*	*continueram, &c.* *contentus eram vel fueram, &c.*	I had contained, &c. I had bene contained, &c.
Futur	cabré,	*caperó,*	*continebo, &c.*	I shall or will containe, &c.
	cabrás,	*capirái,*	*continebor, &c.*	I shall or will bee contained, &c.
	cabrá,	*capirá,*		
	cabrémos,	*capirémo,*		
	cabréys,	*capiréte,*		
	cabrán.	*capiránno.*		

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, *as* CABER.

CABER.

Subiunctiue moode

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	Quépa, Quépas, Quépa, Quepámos, Quepáys, Quépan.	Quando	*Capísca, Capísci, Capísca, Capiámo, Capiáte, Capíscano.*	Cum	*Contineam, &c. Continear, &c.*	when I doe containe, &c. when I am contained, &c
Imperfect. Como	Cupiéra, cabría, cupiésse, Cupiéras, cabrías, cupiésses, Cupiéra, cabría, cupiesse, Cupiéramos, cabríamos, cupiéssemos, Cupiérades, cabríades, cupiéssedes, Cupiéran, cabrían, cupiéssen.	Quando	*Capíssi, caperirei, capería, Capísti, capirésti, Capísse, capirébbe, capería, Capíssimo, capirémmo, Capíste, capiréste, Capíssero, capirébbono, capiríano.*	Cum	*Cõtinerem, &c. Continerer &c.*	when I did containe, &c. when I was contained, &c
Perfec. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, ayáys, áyan,	Cabído.	*Quando Hábbia, Habbí, Habbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano,* Capíto.	Cum	*Continuerim, &c. Contentus sim, &c.*	when I haue contained, &c when I haue been contained, &c.
pluperfect. Como	Uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen,	Cabído.	*Hauéssi, & haueréi, Hauésti, & haueréssi, Hauésti, & haueréhbe, Hauéssimo, & hauerémmo Hauéste, & haueréste, Hauéssero, & haueréhbono*	Capíto.	Cum *Continuissem, &c Contentus essem &c.*	when I had contained, &c when I had bin, &c
Futur Como	Cupiére, Cupiéres, Cupiére, Cupiéremos, Cupiéredes, Cupiéren.			Cum	*Continuero &c. Contentus ero, &c.*	when I shal containe, &c. when I shal be contained &c.

Infinitiue moode Present tense.

CABE'R,] *Capere,* { *Continere,* to containe, &c. / *Contineri,* to be contained, &c,

Preterperfect tense.

avér Cabído,] *hauer capíto,* { *Continuisse,* to haue contained, &c. / *Contentum Esse vel fuisse,* to haue been contained, &c.

Gerund.

Cabiéndo,] *Capendo,*] *Continendo,* { In containing, &c. / I being contained, &c.

Participle.

Cabído,] *Capíto,*] *Contentus,*] contained.

Of

VER. *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in* ER, *as* VER, *in Italian Vedere*, Latin *Videre*, to See.

Indicatiue moode

	Spanish.	Italian,	Latin.	
Pres.	YO VE'O,	*IO Védo & VE'GGIO,*	*Video, &c.*	I doe see, &c.
	tu Vées,	*tu Védi,*		
	aquél Vée,	*colui Véde,*		
	Vémos,	*Vediámo, & Veggiámo,*		
	Véys,	*Vedéte,*		
	Véen.	*Védeno, & Véggono.*		
Imperfect. Como	Vía,	*Vedéua, & Vedéa,*	*Videbam, &c*	I did see, &c.
	Vías,	*Vedéui,*		
	Vía.	*Vedéua, & Vedéa.*		
	Víamos,	*Vedeuamo,*		
	Víades,	*Vedeuáte,*		
	Vían.	*Vedéuano, & Vedéano.*		
First perfect.	Ví or Víde,	*Vídi, or Vidi,*	*Vidi, &c.*	I haue seene, &c.
	Viste, or Viste,	*Vedésti,*		
	Vió, or Vído,	*Vidde.*		
	Vímos,	*Vidémmo,*		
	Vístes,	*Vidésti,*		
	Viéron.	*Viddero.*		
second perfect.	He	*Ho*	*Vidi, &c.*	I haue seene, &c.
	as	*Hai,*		
	a	*Ha,*		
	Hémos	*Habbiámo*		
	avéys	*Hauéte,*		
	an	*Hánno*		
	Vísto.	*Vedúto. or Visto.*		
pluperfect.	Avía	*Hauéua*	*Videram, &c.*	I had seene, &c.
	Avías	*Hauéui,*		
	Avía.	*Hauéua,*		
	Avíamos	*Haueuámo*		
	Avíades	*Haueuáte*		
	Avían	*Hauéuano*		
	Vísto.	*Veduto, or Visto.*		
Futur.	Veré,	*Vederó, & Vedró,*	*Videbo, &c.*	I shall or will see, &c.
	Verás,	*Vederái, & Vedrái,*		
	Verá,	*Vederá, & Vedrá.*		
	Verémos,	*Vederémo, & Vedrémo,*		
	Veréys,	*Vederète, & Vedréte,*		
	Verán.	*Vederánno, & Vedránno.*		

Imperatiue moode.

Vée tu,	*Vedi tu,*	*Vide, videto, &c.*	see thou, &c.
Véa aquél,	*Veda, & vegga colui,*		
Veámos,	*Veggiámo,*		
Véd,	*Vedéte,*		
Véan.	*Védano, & Véggano.*		

In the Subiunctiue and Infinitiue moode altogither as verbes aforegoing, as the Present tense Véa, the Preterimperfect. Viéra, vería, viésse, the Preterperfect. áya visto, the Preterpluperfect. uviéra, or uviésse, visto, the Future viére, Infinitiue vér, Participle visto.

Solér

Solér, to be wont or accuſtomed. Indicat. Pręſ. yo Suélo, I am wont, tu Suéles, aquél Suéle, thou art wont, he is wont. Solémos, we are wont, Soléys, ye are wont, Suélen, they are wont. Imperfect. Solia. Perfect. Soli. In like manner Dolér, to grieue, to be ſorie, declined, yo Duélo, Dolia, Doli, He Dolido, &c.

Of the third and laſt Coniugation of Verbs Irregular in IR *or* Yr, *as* VENIR, *in Italian and Latin Venire, to Come.* VENIR

Indicatiue mode.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pręſ.	yo VENGO,	Io VENGO,	Venio, &c.	I do come, &c.
	tu Viénes,	tu viéni,		
	aquel Viéne.	colui viene.		
	Plur.			
	Venimos,	Veniámo,		
	Venis,	Veníte,		
	Viénen.	Véngono.		
Imperf.	Venía,	Veniua,	Veniebam, &c.	I did come, &c.
	Venías,	Veniui,		
	Venia.	Veniua.		
	Veníamos,	Veniuámo,		
	Veníades,	Veniuáte,		
	Venían.	Veniuano.		
First Perfect.	Víne,	Vénni,	Veni, &c.	I haue come, &c
	Veniſte,	Vennésti,		
	Vino,	Vénne.		
	Venímos,	Venémmo,		
	Veniſte,	Veníſte,		
	Veniéron.	Vénnero.		
Second Perfect.	He / as / a / Hémos / avéys / an — Venído.	Sono / ſei / é — Venúto. / Siámo / Sete / Sono — Venúti.	Veni, &c.	I haue come, &c
Pluperfe.	Avia / Avías / Avia / Aviamos / Aviades / Avian — Venído.	E'ra / éri / era — Venúto. / Erauámo / Erauáte / E'rano — Venúti.	Veneram, &c.	I had come, &c.
Futur.	Vendré or Verné,	Veniró or Verró,	Veniam, &c	I ſhall or will come, &c.
	Vendrás or Vernás,	Venerái or Verrái,		
	Vendrá or Verná.	Venerá or Verrá.		
	Vendrémos or Vernémos,	Venirémo or Verrémo		
	Vendréys or Vernéys,	Veniréte or Verréte,		
	Vendrán or Vernán.	Veniránno or Verránno.		

Imperatiue

Imperatiue moode.

Ven tu, Vénga aquél. Vengámos, Venid, Véngan.	*Vien tu,* *Vénga colui.* *Veniámo,* *Venite,* *Véngano.*	*Veni, Venito,* *&c.*	Come thou, &c.

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	Vénga, véngas, vénga, vengámos, vengáys, véngan.	*Quando*	*Venga,* *venghi,* *venga,* *veniámo,* *veniáte,* *véngano.*	*Cum*	*Veniam,* *&c.*	When I do come, &c.
Imper Como	Viniéra, vernía, viniésse, viniéras, vernías, viniésses, viniéra, vernía, viniésse, Viniéramos, verníamos, viniéssemos, viniérades, verníades, viniéssedes, viniéran, vernían, viniéssen.	*Quando*	*venissi, venerei, verrei, verría,* *venísti, venerésti, verresti,* *venísse, venerébbe, verrébbe, verría,* *venissimo, venirémmo, verémmo,* *veniste, venréste, verréste,* *venissero, venirébbono, verrébbono, verriano.*	*Cum*	*Venirem* *&c.*	When I did come, &c.
Imper fect. Como	áya, áyas, aya, ayámos, ayaýs, ayan, } Venído.	*Quando*	*sia,* *sii & sia,* *sia,* } *Venuto.* *siámo,* *siáte,* *siano,* } *Venuti.*	*Cum*	*Venerim* *&c.*	When I haue come, &c.
pluper fect, &c. Como	Uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen, } Venído.		*fóssi, sarei,* *fósti, saresti,* *fósse, sarébbe,* } *Venuto.* *fóssimo, sarémmo,* *fóste, saréste,* *fóssero, sarébbono,* } *Venuti.*		*Venissem* *&c.*	When I had come, &c.
First Futur Como	*veniére,* *veniéres,* *veniére,* *veniéremos,* *veniéredes,* *veniéren.*			*Cum*	*Venero.* *&c.*	When I shall or will come, &c.
second Futur Como	Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán, } Venído		*saró,* *sarai,* *sará,* } *Venúto.* *sarémo,* *saréte,* *saránno,* } *Venuti.*	*Cum*	*Venero,* *&c.*	When I shall or will come, &c.

Infinitiue

Infinitiue mode Preſent tenſe.

Venír,] *Venire,*] *Venire,*] To come.

Preterperfect tenſe.

Sér venido,] *Eſſere venuto,*] *Veniſſe,*] To haue come.

Futur tenſe.

Avér or eſperár de venir { *Douer venire, Hauer a venire, Eſſer per venire,* } *Venturum eſſe,*] To come hereafter.

Gerund.

Veniéndo,] *Venendo,*] *Veniendo,*] In comming.

Participle of the Preſent and Actiue voice.

El que viéne,] *Venente,*] *Veniens,*] One comming.

Participle of the Preter tenſe and Paſſiue voice, &c.

Venido,] *Venuto,*] *Qui venit,*] Come.

Theſe Verbes following in Ir, thus formed in the Preſent and Preterperfect Tenſe.

Infinitiues.	Prel.	Preterp.
Adormír, to fall aſleepe,	yo Aduérmo,	Adormí.
Dormír, to ſleepe,	yo Duérmo,	Dormí.
Avertír, to marke,	yo Avierto,	Avertí.
Arrepentír, to repent,	yo Arrepiénto,	Arrepentí.
Cobrír, to recouer,	yo Cébro,	Cobrí.
Concebír, to conceiue,	yo Concibo,	Concebí.
Cernír, to lift meale,	yo Cigrno,	Cerní.
Conſentír, to conſent,	yo Conſiénto,	Conſentí.
Elegír, to chooſe out,	yo Elijo,	Elegí.
Fingír, to faine,	yo Finjo,	Fingí.
Gemír, to grone,	yo Gimo,	Gemí.
Mentír, to lie,	yo Miénto,	Mentí.
Ungír, to annoint,	yo Unjo,	Ungí.
Salír, to goe forth,	yo Sálgo,	Salý.
Diferír, to differ,	yo Difiéro,	Diferí.

Imperfect of the Indicat. Difería.
Imperfect of the Subiunct. Diferiría.
Sofrír, to ſuffer, yo Sófro, Sofrí.
Imperfect. of the Indicat. Sofría.
Imperfect of the Subiunct. Soffiriría.

The Compounds of this verbe Venír, Véngo, are declined in euery reſpect in all Modes and Tenſes thorow out as it is, as Revenír, to returne, Revéngo, Revíne, &c. Convenír, to agree, to be expedient, yo Convéngo, Convíne. Devenír, to become, yo Devéngo, Devíne. Sobrevenír, to come vpon ſuddenly, yo Sobrevéngo, Sobrevíne.

Of the third and laſt coniugation of Verbes Irregular in IR, *&* YR, as Dezir,] in Italian *Dire,*] Latin *Dicere*] to ſay. DEZIR.

Indicatiue mode.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latin.	
Prel.	Digo,	*Dico,*	*Dico,* &c.	I ſaie, &c.
	dízes,	*dici,* or *di,*		
	díze,	*dice,*		
	dezímos,	*dicémo,*		
	dezís,	*dite,*		
	dízen.	*dicono,*		

Imper	Dezía, dezias, dezía, Deziámos, deziades, dezian.	Dicéua, dicéui, dicéua, dicenámo, dicenáte, dicénano.	Dicebam &c.	I did saie, &c.
First Perf.	díxe, dixiſte, dixo, dixímos, dixiſtes, dixéron.	díſſi, dicéſti, díſſe, dicémmo, dicéſte, díſſero.	Dixi, &c.	I haue saide, &c.
second Perf.	hé, as, a, hémos, avéys, án, } Dicho.	Ho Hai Ha Habbiámo Havéte Hánno } Détto.	Dixi, &c.	I haue saide, &c.
Pluperfect.	avía, avias, avia, avíamos, avíades, avían, } Dicho.	Haueúa Haueúi Haueúa Haueuámo Haueváte Haueúano } Détto.	Dixeram, &c.	I had said, &c.
Futur	diré, dirás, dirá, dirémos, diréys, dirán.	diró, dirái, dirá, dirémo, diréte, dirénno.	Dicam, &c.	I shall or will say, &c.

Imperatiue mode.

Imperatiue mode.	Di tu, díga aquel, digámos, dezid, digan.	Di, or dice tu, dica colui, diceámo, díte, dícano.	Dic, dicito, &c.	Saie you, &c.

Note that you shall finde with good Authors Dezi for Dezíd, in the second person plurall number of the Imperatiue.

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pzef. Como	Diga, Digas, Diga, Digámos, Digáys, Digan.	Quando Díca, Dici, Díca, Diciámo, Diciáte, Dícano.	Cum Dicam, &c.	when I doe saie, &c.

Imperfect

Imperfect. Como

Dixéra, diria, dixéſſe,	Direi, dicéſſi, deria,	Dicerem,	When I did
Dixéras, dirias, dixeſſes,	Diréſti, dicéſti,	&c.	ſay, &c.
Dixéra, diria, dixéſſe,	Dirébbe, dicéſſe, deria.		
Quando		Cum	
Dixéramos, diriamos, dixéſſemos,	Diréммo, dicéſſimo,		
Dixérades, diriades, dixéſſedes,	Diréſte, diceſte,		
Dixéran, dirian, dixéſſen.	Diréббono, dicéſſero, deri-		
	Quando (ano.	Cum	

Perf. Como

A'ya,	Hábbia,	Dixerim,	When I haue
áyas,	Hábbi,	&c.	ſaid, &c.
áya,	Hábbia,		
dicho.	Detto.		
Ayámos,	Habbiámo,		
ayáys,	Habbiáte,		
áyan,	Habbiano,		
	Quando	Cum	

Pluperfect. Como

uviéra, o uviéſſe,	Haueſſi,	Dixiſſem,	When I had
uviéras, o uviéſſes,	Haueſti,	&c.	ſaid, &c.
uviéra, o uviéſſe,	Haueſſe,		
dicho.	Detto.		
uviéramos, o uviéſſemos,	Haueſſimo,		
uviérades, o uviéſſedes,	Haueſte,		
uvieran, o uviéſſen,	Haueſſino,		
	Quando	Cum	

First Futur. Como

Dixére,		Dixero,	When I ſhall
Dixéres,		&c.	o will ſay, &c.
Dixére,			
Cum			
Dixéremos,			
Dixéredes,			
Dixéren.			
	Quando	Cum	

Second Futur. Como

uviére, o avré,	Haueró,	Dixero,	When I ſhall
uviéres, o avras,	Haueráí,	&c.	o will ſay, &c.
uviére, o avrá,	Haueráa,		
dicho.	Detto.		
uviéremos, o avrémos,	Haueréмo,		
uviéredes, o avréys,	Haueréte,		
uviéren, o avrán,	Haueránno,		

Infinitive mode Preſent tenſe.

DEZIR,] *Dire,*] *Dicere,*] to ſay, to tell.

Preterperfect tenſe.

Avér Dicho,] *hauer Detto,*] *Dixiſſe,*] to haue ſaid o told.

Future tenſe.

Avér de Dezir, { *Douer dire, Eſſer per dire, Hauer a dire,* } *Dicturum eſſe,*] to ſay hereafter.

Gerunds.

Deziéndo,] *Dicendo,*] *Dicendo,*] In ſaying.

Participle of the Preſent tenſe and Active voice.

El que Dize,] *Dicente,*] *Dicens,*] one telling o ſaying.

Participle of the Preter tenſe and paſſive voice.

Dicho,] *Detto,*] *Dictus,*] tould, ſaid, ſpoken.

Participle of the Future tenſe.

El que ha o Eſpera de Dezir, { *Douendo dire, Hauendo a dire, Eſſendo per dire,* } *Dicturus,*] about to ſay hereafter.

The Compounds of this verbe Dezír, Digo, in all points thorow all Moodes and Tenses declined like the Simple, as

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Preterp.
Biendezír, to blesse,	yo Biendigo,	Biendixe.
Maldezír, to curse,	yo Maldígo,	Maldixe.
In like sort these following thus,		
Conduzír, to conduct,	yo Condusgo,	Condúxe.
Introduzír, to bring in,	yo Introdusgo,	Introdúxe.
Induzír, to induce,	yo Indusgo,	Indúxe.
Traduzír, to translate,	yo Tradusgo,	Tradúxe.
Produzír, to produce,	yo Produzgo,	Prodúxe.
Salír, to goe forth,	yo Salgo,	Salí.
Regír, to gouerne,	yo Rijo,	Regí.

After the maner of Dezír, is this verbe Salír, to go out or make a sallie, declined, as in the Present tense of the Indicatiue moode yo Sálgo, I go out, tu Sáles, thou goest out, &c. Preterimperfect yo Salía, &c. First Preterperfect, Salí. Second Preterperfect, he Salido, &c. Pluperfect. avía Salido. Future, yo Saldré. Imperatiue Sal tu, goe thou out, Sálga aquél, let him goe out, &c. Subiunctiue Present tense, yo Sálga, tu Sálgas, &c. Preterimperfect Saliéra, Saldría, Saliésse, &c. Preterperfect. aya Salido. Pluperfect. uviéra Salido. Future Saliére. Infinitiue Salír. Gerund Saliéndo. Participle Salido.

So Seguir to follow, yo Sígo, Siguía, Siguí. He Seguído, avía Seguído, Seguiré. Imperatiue Sigue tu follow thou, Siga aquél let him follow, Sigámos let vs follow, Seguíd follow yee, Sigan let them follow. Subiunctiue Present, Como yo Siga. Imperfect. Siguiéra, Seguiría, Siguiésse. Preterperfect. áya Seguído. Pluperfect. uviésse Seguído. Future Seguiére, &c. Infinitiue Seguír, Participle Seguído. So in all points is Conseguír to obtaine, declined.

Sumír, to drench or ouerwhelme, differing from Sumár, to sum vp, thus. In the Present of the Indicatiue all one yo Súmo, Imperfect yo Sumía, I did drench, yo Sumáva, I did summe vp. First Perfect, yo Sumí, I haue drencht, tu Sumíste, aquél Sumió, yo Sumé, I haue summed vp, tu Sumáste, thou hast summed vp, aquél Sumó, he hath summed vp, &c.

Of the third and last Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in IR *or* YR, *as* YR, *in* Italian *Ire* or *Audare*, in Latin *Ire*, to Goe.

Indicatiue moode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	VOY,	*VO & VADO,*	*Eo,*	I goe,
	Vás,	*Vái,*	*is, &c.*	thou goest, &c.
	Vá,	*Vá,*		
	Vámos,	*Andiámo,*		
	Váys,	*Andáte,*		
	Ván.	*Vánno.*		
Imperfect.	Y'va,	*Andáua,*	*Ibam, &c.*	I did goe, &c.
	ývas,	*Andáui,*		
	ýva,	*Andáua,*		
	ývamos,	*Andauámo,*		
	ývades,	*Andauáte,*		
	ývan.	*Andáuano.*		
First Perfect	Fuý,	*Andái,*	*Iui, &c.*	I went, &c.
	Fuíste,	*Andásti,*		
	Fué,	*Andó,*		
	Fuímos,	*Andámmo,*		
	Fuístes,	*Andáste,*		
	Fuéron.	*Andárano,*		

second

Second perfect.	He, as a. Hémos, avéys, an,	Y'do.	Sono, Sei, é, Andato. Siámo, Sete, Sono, Andati.		Iui, &c.	I haue gone, &c.
pluperfect.	Avía, Avías, Avía, Aviámos, Aviades, Avían,	Y'do.	Era, Eri, Era, Andato. Eranámo, Eranáte, E'rano, Andati.		Iueram, &c.	I had gone, &c.
Futur	Yré, Yrás, Yrá, Yrémos, Yréys, Yrán.		Anderó, & Andró, Anderai, or Andrái, Anderá, or Andrá, Anderémo, or Andrémo, Anderéte, or Andréte, Anderánno, or Andránno.		Ibo, &c.	I shall or will go, &c.

Imperatiue mode.

Va, & Ve,	Vá,
Váya,	Váda, Vadi,
Vámos,	Andiámo,
yd,	Andáte,
Váyan.	Vádano, & Vádino.

Vete, Vete, Get thee hence, Get thee hence.
With Authors this Verbe is sometime written with Y, sometimes with I.

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pret. Como	Váya, Váyas, Váya. Vámos, Váys, Váyan.	Quando	Vada, Vada & Vadi, Vada & Vadi. Andiámo, Andiáte, Vádano & Vádino.	Cum	Eam, &c.	When I doe goe, &c.
Imperfect. Como	Fuéra, Yría, fuésse, Fuéras, yrías, fuésses, Fuéra, yría, fuésse. Fuéramos, yríamos, fuéssemos, Fuérades, yríades, fuéssedes, Fuéran, yrían, fuéssen.	Quando	Andaſſi, Anderéi, Andería, Andáſſi, Anderéſti, Andáſſe, Anderébbe, Andería. Andáſſimo, Anderémmo, Andaſte, Anderéſte, Andáſſero, Anderébbono, Anderíano.	Cum	Irem, &c.	When I did goe, &c.
Perf. Como	áya, áyas, áya, áyamos, ayáys, áyan, Y'do.	Quando	Sia, Sij, Sia Andato. Siámo, Siate, Siano Andati.	Cum	Iuerim, &c.	When I haue gone, &c.

Pluperf.

			Quando			
Plu-perfect. Como	uviéra, or uviésse,	Y'do.	*Fóssi, sarei*	*Andato.*	*Iuissem, &c.*	When I had gone, &c.
	uviéras, or uviésses,		*Fossi, sarésti*			
	uviéra, or uviésse,		*Fosse, sarébbe*			
	uviéramos, or uviéssemos		*Fóssimo, sarémmo*	*Andati.*	*Cum*	
	uviérades, or uviéssedes,		*Fóste, saréste*			
	uviéran, or uviéssen,		*Fóssero, sarébbono*			
					Cum	
First future. Como	Fuére,				*Iuero, &c.*	When I shall or will be, &c.
	Fuéres,					
	Fuére,					
	Fuéremos,					
	Fuéredes,					
	Fuéren.					
			Quando			
second Futur. Como	uviére, or avré	Y'do.	*Saró*	*Andato.*	*Iuero, &c.*	When I shall or wil go, &c.
	uviéres, or avrás,		*Sarái*			
	uviére, or avrá,		*Sará*			
	uviéremos, or avrémos,		*Sarémo*	*Andati.*	*Cum*	
	uviéredes, or avréys,		*Saréte*			
	uviéren, or avrán,		*Saránno*			

Infinitiue moode Present tense.

Y'R,] *Andare, ire,*] *Ire,*] to Goe.

Preterperfect tense.

Aver ydo,] *Hauer andato,*] *Iuisse,*] to haue Gone.

Future tense.

Aver de ýr, { *Douer Andare,* / *Hauer ad Andare,* / *Esser per Andare,* } *Iturum esse,*] to Goe hereafter.

Gerund.

Yéndo,] *Andando,*] *Eundo,*] In Going.

Supines.

Yr,] *Andare,*] *Itum,*] to Goe.

De ser ydo,] *Esser Andato,*] *Itu,*] to be Gone.

Participle of the Present tense and Actiue voice.

El que va,] *Andante,*] *Euns,*] one Going.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passiue voice.

Y'do,] *Andato,*] Gone.

Of

Of Verbes Impersonals.

The Spanish as the French and Italian Impersonals are of the manner of the Latines, which want the first and second person, and are declined onely in the third person thorow out all Moodes and Tenses, as

Indicatiue moode.

	Present.	Ay,	There is.
	Imperfect.	Avia,	There was.
1	Perfect.	úvo,	There was.
2	Perfect.	á,	There hath bene.
	Pluperfect.	avía, } Avído,	There had bene.
	Future.	Avrá.	There shall be, &c.
	Imperat.	A'ya,	Let there be.

Subiunctiue moode.

Present.	Aya,	When there is.
Imperf.	uviéra, avría, uviésse,	When there was.
Perfect.	aya Avido,	When there hath bene.
Pluperfect.	uviéra or uviésse Avído,	When there had bene.
Future.	uviére or Avra Avido.	When there shall be.

Note that the Spanyard almost continually vseth this Impersonall Ay as the French their *Il y ya*, in English There is, as by obseruing you shall most vsually finde, as also this thirde person Comple thus declined, of Complir the Infinitiue.

Indicatiue moode.

Present.	Cómple,	*Decet, Oportet,*	It beseemeth or behoueth.
Imperfect.	Complía,	*Decebat, Oportebat,*	It did beseeme.
1 Perfect.	Complió,	*Decuit, Oportuit,*	It hath beseemed, &c.
2 Perfect.	a Complído,	*Decuit, Oportuit.*	
Pluperfect.	Avia Complido,	*Decuerat, Oportuerat.*	
Future.	Complirá,	*Decebit, Oportebit.*	

And so thorow the third person of the rest.

Indicatiue moode.

	Present.	E's,	There is.
	Imperfect.	éra,	There was.
1	Perfect.	fue,	There hath bene.
2	Perfect.	avía Sído,	There hath bene.
	Pluperf.	avia Sido,	There had bene.
	Future.	Será,	There shall be, &c.

And so decline forward, as in the Subiunctiue moode of the verbe Ser, Soy afore going in the third person onely.

Indicatiue moode.

	Present.	Es menestér,	*Oportet,*	It behoueth.
	Imperf.	era menestér,	*Oportebat,*	It did behoue.
1	Perfect.	fue menestér,	*Oportuit,*	It hath behoued.
2	Perfect.	a sido menestér,	*Oportuit,*	It hath behoued.
	Pluperf.	avia sido menester,	*Oportuerat,*	It had behoued.
	Future.	avra menestér,	*Oportebit,*	It will behoue.

And so thorow the rest, &c.

This verbe Impersonall Plazér declined.

Indicatiue moode.

	Present.	Pláze,	It pleaseth.
	Imperf.	Plazía,	It did please.
1	Perfect.	Plúgo,	It hath pleased.
2	Perfect.	a Plazido,	It hath pleased.
	Pluperf.	avia Plazido,	It had pleased.
	Future.	Plazerá,	It will please.
	Imper.	Pléga,	Let it please.

Subiunctiue

Subiunctiue mode.

Present.	Pléga,	When it doth please.
Imperf.	Pluguiéra, Pluguiésse,	When it did please.
Perfect.	áya Plazido,	When it hath pleased.
Pluperf.	uviéra Plazido,	When it had pleased.
Future.	Pluguiére,	When it will please.

To forme an Impersonal of the Passiue voice, you must take this particle Se, and the third person of any verbe thus: which particle so added makes a verbe Impersonall Passiue, as

Pres.	Se Dize,	Si dice or diceſi,	Dicitur,	It is said or spoken,
Imper.	Se Dezia,	Si dicéna or dicénaſi, &c.	Dicebatur, &c.	It was said or spoken &c.
1 Perfect	Se Dixo,			
2 Perfect	Se a Dicho,			
Plupe.	S'avia Dicho,			
Futur.	Se Diré.			

Of Participles.

Participle of the Present tense.

IN Spanish Participles of the present tense and active signification are made of the thirde person present tense of the Indicatiue mode of the same Verbe, putting before it the Relatiue, El que, as El que Revéla, reuealing, Latin *Reuelans*: El que Entiénde, vnderstanding, in Latin *Intelligens*: El que oye, hearing, in Latin *Audiens*.

Participle of the Preter tense.

Participles of the Preter tense and passiue signification end in ádo, ído, or ydo, which in the first conjugation are formed of the thirde person of the Present tense of the Indicatiue mode, by adding to do, as, Revela, reveládo: Ama, amádo: Castiga, castigádo: and in the seconde and thirde conjugation of the same Present tense, by chaunging e, into ido, and ydo, as Entiende, entendido: Lée, Leýdo: Crée, creýdo: Pide, pedido.

But for the Irregular (according to the nature of the worde) without rule, as Factus, fecho, made, *Dictus*, Dícho, saide, spoken.

Participle of the Future tense.

The Future tense with this Verbe Ha, or Espéra, and the Infinitiue of the Verbe, as El que ha or Espera de revelár, Entendér, or, oyr: *Reuelaturus*, *Intellecturus*, *Auditurus*, about to reueale, about to vnderstande, about to heare.

Participle of Present tense and active signification.

Pres. El que revéla, entiénde, óye, Latin, *Reuelans*, *Intelligens*, *Audiens*, Reuealing, vnderstanding, hearing.

Participle of the Preter tense and passiue signification.

Preter. Reveládo, Entendido, oýdo, Latin *Reuelatus*, *Intellectus*, *Auditus*, Reuealed, vnderstood, heard.

Participle of the Future tense.

Future. El que ha or espéra de Revelár, Entendér, oýr, Latin *Reuelaturus*, *Intellecturus*, *Auditurus*, to reueale hereafter, to vnderstand hereafter, to heare hereafter.

Of Aduerbes.

I Haue handled before the fower parts of speech declined. Now come we to the other fower vndeclined, called Indeclinable, beginning first with the Aduerbes, whereof some in the Spanish tong are formed of Nownes of the Feminine gender in a, as are almost all the Aduerbes of Qualitie, as Alta, high; Altaménte, highlie; Graciosa, graciosaménte, graciouslie; Luenga, luengaménte; in Latin *Diu*, long: which manner of forming the Italian likewise obserueth, as *Gratiosamente*, *Longamente*, *Sauiamente*, so doth the French, making the worde to ende in *Ment*, as *Gratieusement*, *Longuement*, *Saggement*. Wherefore I thinke good to set downe the Aduerbes following and the rest: first, the Spanish, then Italian, after French, next Latin, and last English: euerie one separated one from another with this crooked line thus,] Aduerbes some be

Aduerbes formed of Nounes of the Femmine gender in a.

Nota.

of Qualitie.

Fielménte,] *Fidelmente,*]Fidelement,] *Fideliter,*] **Faithfully.**
Buénamente, o᷑ bien] *Bene,*] Bien,] *Bene,*] **Well.**
Malaménte, o᷑ mal,] *Male,*] Mauaiſement,] *Male,*] **Ill.**
De buéna gana] *Di buona voglia, Volontieri volontieremente,*] Volutiers, de bon cueur,] *Libenter*] **willingly.**

of Quantitie.

Mucho,] *Molto,*] Beaucoup,] *Multum vel Multo*] **Much.**
Poco,] *Poco,*] Peu,] *Parum vel Paululum,*] **Little.**
Múcho mas,] *Via piu,*] Beaucoup plus,] *Multo magis,*] **Much more.**
Mas,] *Piu,*] Plus,] *Magis,*] **More.**
Por de mas,] *Troppo,*] Trop,] *Nimis*] **to Much.**
Demaſiádo,] *Troppo*] Trop,] *Nimis,*] **to Much.**

of Time.

Oy,] *Hóggi,*] Auiourd'huy,] *Hodie,*] **To daie.**
Ayér,] *Heri ieri,*] Hier,] *Heri,*] **Yesterdaie.**
Mañána,] *Domani,*] Demain,] *Cras,*] **To morrowe.**
Antiér,] *Antieri,*] Deuant hier,] *Pridie,*] **The other day.**
El dia ſiguiente,] *Il ſeguente giorno,*] Le lendemain,] *Poſtridie,*] **The next daie after to morrowe.**
Mucho ha,] *Molto fa,*] Deja long temps,] *Iamdiu,*] **Long ſince.**
Poco ha,] *Poco fa,*] Naguéres,] *Iamdudum,*] **A little ſince.**
Agóra,] *or, ora,*] aceſt heure,] *Iamiam,*] **Euen now.**
Antes] *Inanzi,*] Deuant,] *Ante*] **Before.**
Luégo,] *Preſto, Toſto,*] Soudainement,] *Illico, ſtatim,*] **Forthwith, by and by.**
Núnca,] *Giamai,*] Iamais,] *Nunquam,*] **Neuer.**
Quando,] *Quando* ,] Quand,] *Quando,*] **When.**
Siémpre,] *Sempre*] Tousjours,] *Semper,*] **Alwaies.**
Entónces,] *Al hora,*] Donques,] *Tunc,*] **Then.**
Miéntras,] *Mentre*] Cependant,] *Interim,*] **In the meane while.**
Súbito,] *Subito,*] Sodainement,] *Subito,*] **Sodainly.**
Muchas vezes,] *Molte volte, Molte fiate,*] Fort ſouent,] *Sepe*] **Verie often.**
Pocas vezés,] *Rade volte,*] Peu ſouent,] *Raro,*] **Seldome.**
Algunas vezes,] *Qual che volte, Qual che fiate,*] Quelquefois,] *Aliquando,*] **Somtimes.**

of Place.

AQVI',] *Qui, quia, ci,*] Icy,] *Hic, huc,*] **Here.**
Aý, alli, alla,] *Ini, la, cola, quiui,*] La, audela,] *Illic,*] **There.**
A Donde,] *Doue, oue,*] Ou,] *Vbi, quo,*] **whither, where.**
De Donde,] *Onde, donde,*] Dont, d'ou,] *Vnde,*] **from whence.**
Acá,] *Di qua,*] Par icy,] *Hac,*] **this way.**
Aculla,] *Cola per coſta,*] Par dela,] *Iſtac, iſtuc,*] **that way.**
De aqui,] *De qui, Quinci,*] D'icy,] *Hinc,*] **from hence.**
De allí, de allá,] *Indi, di la, Quindi,*] Dela,] *Illinc,*] **from hence.**
Dentro,] *Dentro, entro,*] Dedans,] *Intus,*] **within.**
Fuéra,] *Fuori, di fuori,*] Hors, de hors,] *Foris, foras,*] **without.**
Delánte,] *Inanzi,*] Deuant,] *Ante,*] **Before.**
Atrás,] *Dietro,*] Derrier,] *Poſt,*] **Behinde.**
A parte,] *De banda,*] al'eſcart,] *Separatim, ſeorſum,*] **aside, apart, by it selfe.**
Arríba,] *Sopra, diſopra, In ſu, ſuſo,*] Enhaut,] *Surſum,*] **Aboue.**
Abáxo,] *In giu, giuſo, ſotto, di ſotto,*] En bas,] *Deorſum,*] **Beneath.**
Cerca,] *Intorno, dattorno,*] Enuiron,] *Circiter,*] **About, nigh vnto, almost.**
Cábe, Iunto,] *Apreſſo, danicino,*] Preſt, aupres,] *Prope,*] **Neere vnto.**
Léxos,] *Lontano, di lunghi,*] Loin,] *Procul,*] **Far off.**
Encima,] *Su, ſopra,*] Sur, deſſus,] *Super,*] **Upon.**
So,] *Sotto, diſotto,*] Deſſoubs,] *Subter,*] **Under.**

of Affirming

SI, *as* Si Senor,] *Si, as Signore Si,*] Ouy, *as* ouy Mounſieur,] *Ita, ita Domine,* **Yea, yea Sir.**
Ciérto, ciertaménte,] *Certo, certamente,*] Certes,] *Certè, certo,*] **Truely.**
En verdád, verdaderaménte,] *In verita, di vero, in vero,*] Vrayement, en verite, certainement,] *Verè,*] **Truely, in truth, verily.**
Tambien,] *Si bene, etiandio, ancor, anche,*] Si bien, ainſi, auſſi,] *Etiam, quoque,*] **as well.**
Antes,] *Piu toſto,*] Pluſtoſt,] *Potius,*] **Rather.**

of

of Denying.
NO,] *Non,no,ne,*] Non,neny,pas,point,] *Non,haud,minime,*] **Not.**
Nádа, No nada,] *Niente,nulla,*] Rien,] *Nihil,*] **Nothing,nothing at all.**
Ni, Tam poco,] *Ne,*] Ni,ne,] *Neque,*] **Neither.**

of numbring.
VNAVEZ,] *Vna bolta,Vna fiata,*] Vne fois,] *Semel,*] **Once.**
Dos vezes,] *Due volte,Due fiate,*] Deuxfois,] *Bis,*] **Twise.**
Tres vezes,] *Tre volte,tre fiate,*] Troisfois,] *Ter,*] **Thrise,** &c. as in the Pronoune before of **Numbers.**
Muchas vezes,] *Spesso volte,molte fiate,*] Beaucoup de fois,] *Sape,*] **Oftentimes.**
Pocas vézes,] *Rade volte,*] Rarement,] *Raro,*] **Seldome.**

of Shewing.
HEAQVI,] *Ecco,*] Voicy,voila,] *Ecce,*] **Behold.**

of Encouraging.
EA,EA Pues,] *Su,corrággio,*] Sus,courage,] *Age,perge,*] **Goe to then.**

of encreasing.
MAS,] *Piu,*] Plus,] *Plus,*] **More.**
Mucho mas,] *Molto Piu,molto assai,*] Beaucoup plus,] *Multo magis,*] **Much more.**
De masiádo,] *Troppo,di soverchio,*] Trop,] *Nimium,*] **Too much.**

of Deminishing.
MENOS,] *Meno,*] Moins,] *Paulo minus,*] **Lesse.**
Poco a Poco,] *Poco,a Poco,*] Peu a Peu,] *Paulatim,*] **By little and little.**
Passo,] *Piano,piano,*] Tout bellement, Pent a petit,] *Sensim,*] **Soft and faire.**

of wishing.
OXALA,] *O Dio vaglia, Dio voleſſe,*] Pleuſt a Dieu,] *Vtinam,*] **would to God, I pray God.**
O Si,] *Oſe,Oſi,*] Pleuſt a Dieu que,] *Vtinam,*] **would to God, I pray God.**

of Asking.
PORQVE?] *Perche?*] Pourquoy?] *Quare?*] **why? wherefore?**
Que?] *Che?*] Quoy?] *Quid?*] **what?**
Donde?] *Onde?*] Ou,] *Vbi,quo,*] **where.**
Adonde,] *Doue,*] Ou,] *Quo,*] **whether.**
De Donde,] *Onde,*] D'ou,dont,] *Vnde,*] **From whence.**
Quando?] *Quando?*] Quand?] *Quando?*] **When.**

of doubting.
QVIçA',] *Forſe, a caſo,*] Fortuitement,] *Fortaſſis,*] **Perhaps.**
Porventura,] *Peraventura,*] Parauenture,] *Fortaſſe,*] **Peraduenture, Perhaps.**

of Order.
DESPVE'S,] *Poi,dipoi,Dapoi,doppo,*] Apres,depuis,] *Post,*] **After.**
Allénde de ésto,] *Oltra a cio,oltra a questo,*] Outre ce,d'aduantage,] *Praterea,*] **Furthermore.**
Finalménte,] *Alla fine,*] En fin,Finablement,] *Tandem,*] **At length.**

of Likenes.
CO'MO,] *Comme,*] Comme,] *Sicut,velut,*] **As.**
Assi,] *Cosi,*] Ainsi,] *Ita,sic,*] **So.**

of Chance.
A CASO, Por dicho,] *A caso,*] Fortuitement,] *Fortuito,*] **By chance, by hap.**

of Comparison.
MAS,] *Piu,*] Plus,] *Plus,*] **More.**
Ménos,] *Meno,*] Moins,] *Minus,*] **Lesse.**
Mucho mas,] *Via piu,Assai piu,*] Beaucoup,d'auantage,] *Multo magis,*] **Much more.**
Mucho ménos,] *Molto meno,*] Beaucoup moins,] *Multo minus,*] **Much lesse.**
Mejór,] *Meglıore,*] Mellieur,] *Melius,*] **Better.**
Peór,] *Peggiore,*] Pis,] *Peior,*] **Worse.**
Todo del mundo,] *Piu del mondo,*] Tout le mond,] *Maximè,*] **Chiefly.**

Gathering togither.
IV'NTO, Iuntaménte,] *Insieme,*] Enſemble,] *Simul,*] **Togither.**

Seuering.
A PARTE,] *Seperatamente,*] A'part,] *Seperatim,seorsim,*] **A sunder**

Chosing.
MAS Aýna,] *Piu tosto,*] Pluſtoſt,] *Potius,*] **Rather.**
Mucho mas,] *Molto meglio,*] Beaucoup mieux,] *Potius,*] **much Rather.**

Contrariety.
TODAvéz,] *Tutta via,*] Toutefois,] *Tamen,*] **Notwithſtanding.**
Aúnque,] *Come,che, Etiandio che, Anchor che,*] Encore,] *Etiamſi,*] **Although.**

with-

withdrawing. { ALOMénos,] *Alméno, almánco,*] Au moins,] At the least.
Sólo,] *Solo,*] Seul,] *Solúm,*] Onely.
Porque,] *Pur, accioche, che,*] Pourceque,] *Propterea,*] For that.

Of a Coniunction.

A Coniunction is that which knitteth and ioineth parts of speech togither, and is with the Spaniard almost in the same manner as the Latin, sauing they haue not so many, but yet some are

of coupling as { Y, and E,] *e,*] ,et] *et,* And.
Como,] *Comme*] Comme,] *Vt,*] As.
Tambien,] *Ancor, Ancho, Etiandio,*] Si bien, ainsi, aussi,] *Etiam, Quoque,*] Also.

Nota. Note that E properly is not a Spanish Coniunction, but onely vsed for the Y, when the worde following beginneth with a Y, bicause two Y Y, shoulde not come togither, La ley e la Justicia, and not La ley y la Justicia, but otherwise alwaies vse Y.

of Disioyning. { Ni] *Ne,*] Ne,] *Nec, Neque,*] Neither.
O,] *O, ouero,*] Ou,] *Aut, Ve, Vel, Seu, Siue*] Either.

of Causing. [PORQVE,] *Accioche, Percioche,*] Pourceque] *Propterea quod,*] For that, wherfore.

of Conditioning. { SI,] *Se,*] Si,] *Si,*] If.
Dado que,] *Se cosi,*] Si aussi,] *Si ita,*] If so.

of Excepting. { SINO,] *Se non*] Si non,] *Nisi,*] Except, if not.
Mas,] *Ma,*] Mais,] *Quin,*] But.
Otraménte,] *Altramente,*] Autrement,] *Alioquin,*] Otherwise.

of Diminishing. [ALOMENOS,] *Alméno, Almanco,*] Au moins,] *Saltem,*] At least.

[AVNQVE,] *Ancorche, Quantunche, Benche, Etiandio,* } Encore,] *Etsi quamquam, Quamuis,* } Although.

[TODA via,] *Tutta via, Tutta volta, Nondimeno, Nondimanco, Nientideméno,* } Toutefois,] *Tamen, esto,*] Notwithstanding.

A Preposition.

Preposition. THe Spanish hath the same vse of Prepositions as the Latins haue, sometimes by composition with another worde, as Bolvér, to turne; Rebolvér, to ouerturne: Hazér, to do, Rehazér, to renewe, &c. Sometime by apposition (as the Latins doe) by putting the Preposition before the Noune, as Ala corte, to the court: Por el Rey, for the king: En la yglésia, in the church.

Nota. Note that this Preposition De, or Des, alwaies makes the worde that it is ioyned with, of a quite contrary signification, as Hazér, to do: Deshazér, to vndoe: Atár, to tie or bind: Desatar, to vntie: Cansado, wearie: Descansado, resting: Dicha, happines: Desdicha, vnhappines, misfortune: And so in the French, *Faire*, to do: *Desfaire*, to vndo: *Lier*, to binde, *Deslier*, to vnbinde, &c. Prepositions of the Spanish thus,

A,] *A,*] Ad,] *Ad,*] To, as A fe, a la fe,] *A fede, A fe,*] Par ma foy], *Per fidem,*] By my troth.

De,] *Di, de da,*] De, du,] *De,*] Of or from,] as De la corte,] *De la corte,*] Du palais,] From the court.

Para,] *Per,*] Pour,] *Propter,*] For. as Para mi,] *Per me,*] Pour moy,] *Propter me.*] For me.

Por,] *Per,*] Par,] *Per,*] For, by or thorow. as Por mi vida,] *Por mia vita,*] Par ma vie,] *Per vitam,*] By my life.

Contra,] *Contra, Incontra,*] Contre] *Contra,*] **Against.**
Contra el eſtado,] *Contra il ſtato,*] Contre l'eſtat,] *Contra ſtatum,* **Againſt the eſtate.**
CABE] *Preſſo, Appreſſo,*] Preſt, aupres,] *Prope,*] **Nære.as** Cabe la ciudád] *Appreſſo la citta,*] Apres de la citte,] *Prope vrbem,*] **Nære the citie.**
FRONTERO,] *Rimpetto, Dirimpetto,*] Vis a vis,] *E regione,*] **Ouer againſt.**
HASTA,] *Fino, Sino, Infino, Inſino,*] Iuſques,] *Vſque,*] **Vntill.**
HA'ZIA,] *Ver, verſo,*] Enuers,] *Verſus,*] **Towards.**
SOBRE,] *Sopra, Diſopra,*] Sur,] *Super,*] **Vpon.**
ENCI'MA,] *In ſu,*] Sus,] *In il pu alto*] En la ſomette,] *In vertice,*] **Vpon the top.**
SO,] *Sotto, diſotto, Giu,*] De ſoubs,] *Subter,*] **Vnder.**
ENTRE,] *Fra, Infra,*] Entre,] *Inter,*] **Betweene.**
ATRAS,] *Dietro,*] Derrier,] *Pone,*] **Behinde.**
ADELANTE,] *Dinanzi, Inanzi,*] Deuant,] *Ante,*] **Before.**
Cerca, Acerca,] *Circa, Intorno, Attorno,*] Enuiron,] *Circum, Circa,*] **About.**
Fuera,] *Fuori,*] Hors, dehors,] *Foris, Foras,*] **Without doores.**
Dentro,] *Dentro,*] Dans, dedans,] *Intus,*] **Within.**
Con,] *Con,*] Auec,] *Cum,*] **With.**
Sin,] *Senza,*] Sans,] *Sine,*] **Without.**
Deſde,] From or ſince, as Deſde la muerte, &c. **From, or ſince the death, &c.**

These following are vſed with the Preposition De, with them, as

Aquende de la caſa,] *Di qua de la caſa,*] Par deçá de la maiſon,] *Ex hac parte domus,*] **On this ſide the** (houſe.
Allende,] *Di la,*] Par de la,] *Ex altera parte,*] **On the other ſide.**
Al derredor, or Entorno,] *Intorno, Attorno,*] Enuiron,] *Circum, Circa,*] **About.**

Of an Interiection.

An Interiection declareth a ſudden paſſion of the minde. The Spaniards vſe not ſo often Interiections or ſudden paſſions of the minde; neither in their ſpæch nor writing, as doth the French, or Italian, and yet they haue theſe following: Some be of

Mirth or Reioycing. [O Bueno,] *Oh bene,*] He bien, he dea,] *Euax, vah,*] **O well.**
Laughing. [Hi, hi, hi, or Ha, ha, ha.] *Ah, ah,*] Ah, eh,] *Ha, ha, he,*] **Ha, ha, he.**
Wondring. {O Ieſus, or Vala me Dios,} *O vh, vh,*] Oh, oh,] *Pape,*] **O Jeſus** good Lord helpe me.
Grieuing. [A Y, ay,] *Aih, ah, ahime,*] Las, olas, helas, ach,] *Heu, hei,*] **Alas, out alas.**

Of Syntaxis.

Definition of Syntaxis. Syntaxis is a due coupling together of Spæch according to the right Rules of Grammar, which the beſt Authors, both Ancient and Moderne haue ſtill vſed in writing and ſpeaking.

Syntaxis, of the Greeke word σύν, which is *Con*, and τάξις, *ordino, quaſi, coordinatio*, which is conſtruction or agreement.

But for that the Spaniſh (as the Italian and French) being deriued from the Latin (as before ſaid, and ſtill keepeth as great affinitie as ſiuer and tinne, both proceeding (as *Alchimiſtes* ſaie) from Quickſiluer, or as no one can gainſay from the mother earth, or as a different Plant grafted on a ſtrange ſtocke or træ: It muſt neceſſarily be ordered by many Rules of the Latin, which here to repeate were loſt labour and in vaine, as hath ſeemed to the moſt part of all thoſe learned, that of any theſe vulgar languages haue written: Finiſhing their Grammars at the ende of the eight parts of ſpæch and leauing this quite out: which order I haue obſerued, referring the Latin Reader to the Rules of the Latin Syntaxis for this part of Grammar, and other to due obſeruation in reading good Authors: wiſhing increaſe to both, to their owne contents, and my ſelfe hereby to haue furthered both, to mine owne chiefe deſire.

FINIS.

I Haue for the Learners vſe deſirous of the tongue, read ouer diuers Authors, gathering out of them the hard phraſes and manner of ſpeech, the vncouth ſayings, together with ſome prouerbes, as they fall in their places (which are the difficultie of the tongue) and explained them in Engliſh, commonly ſetting downe firſt the Engliſh word for word as the Spaniſh is, then this *i.* for Latin, *id eſt*, that is to ſay, for the ſenſe and meaning, then the line and the leafe of the booke, that by theſe the Learner may the better iudge of their like when he meeteth with them. For the leafe I ſet downe *fol.* and *a.* ſignifieth the firſt ſide of the leafe, and *b.* the ſecond, *lin.* ſignifieth what line, and the figure after *fol.* telleth the leafe, and *lin.* what line it is. If you finde *pag.* it is to finde what page of the booke. If you ſee *1. part.* it is for the firſt volume or part of the booke, and *2. part.* for the ſecond, &c.

Words, Phraſes, Sentences and Prouerbes out of DIANA of Monte Mayor in 16. printed at Antwerpe 1580.

Los de mas. *fol.* 3. *b. lin.* 14. **The reſt.**

Las horas que ſe ſobrávan. *fol.* 4. *b. lin.* 2. **The howers which remained, or The reſt of the howers.**

Tomándo a vézes. *fol.* 4. *b. lin.* 6. **Taking by fits or turnes.**

Paſſár por el pienſamiénto. *fol.* 4. *b. lin.* 14. *and* 7. *a. lin.* 25. *and* 26. *b.* 2. **To enter into the minde or thought.**

Tam póco le dáva péna. *fol.* 4. *b. lin.* 17. **Neither did it grieue or trouble him.**

A vueſtro ſálvo. *fol.* 6. *b. lin.* 17. **Your ſelfe being ſafe, or without your owne danger.**

Como los uviſte a las mános? *fol.* 10. *b. lin.* 5. **How came they to your hands? or how came you by them?**

Por tu vída. *fol.* 10. *b. lin.* 21. **By thy life,** *i.* **I pray thee hartily.**

Tomár de córo. *fol.* 10. *b. lin.* 23. **To take by quire,** *i.* **To haue by memorie, hart, or without booke.**

Favoreſcér me a mi *fol.* 11. *b. lin.* 5. *and* Me moviéra a mi. *fol.* 2. *a. lin.* 8. **To fauour me and did moue me. Here the Spaniſh vſeth two accuſatiue caſes after the verbe, both of the perſon: and not as the Latin, one of the perſon and another of the thing.**

Deſpues que te fuiſte. *fol.* 11. *b. lin.* 21. **After thou wenteſt.**

Yo fuý, tu fuiſte, aquél fué, nos fuýmos, fuyſtes, fuéron. **I went, thou wenteſt, he went, we went, ye went, they went. This** Fuy, fuyſte, **commeth of the Infinitiue moode** ýr, **to goe, and the very ſame** Fuy, fuiſte, fue, &c. **commeth of the Infinitiue moode** Sér, **to be: but looke backe in the Grammar and compare the two verbes together.**

De ay a un póco. *fol.* 11. *b. lin.* 28. **A prettie while after.**

Que es del? *fol.* 12. *a. lin.* 20. **Where is he? what is become of him?**

Quando ſe póne el Sol. *fol.* 13. *a. lin.* 8. **When the ſunne ſets.**

Fuéra de mi, fuéra de ti, fuéra de ſi. *fol.* 13. *b. lin.* 14. **Beſides my ſelfe, beſides thy ſelfe, beſides himſelfe, or Out of my wit, out of thy wit, out of his wit.**

Tén púnto. *fol.* 13. *b. lin.* 24. **Stay, hold, ſtop, Giue me leaue a little.**

Le va bien, le va mal. *fol.* 15, *a. lin.* 7. **It goes well with him, it goes ill with him. He is well, he is ill.**

Múcho a. **A good while ſince.**

Mucho avía, mucho úvo, mucho avrá. *fol.* 17. *a. lin.* 4. **It was a good while agoe, it hath been a good while ſince, it ſhall or will be long agoe.**

Póco ha or Póco ſa. **A little while agoe, or a little ſince.**

Poco avía, Poco úvo, Poco avrá. **It was a little ſince, it hath been but a little ſince, it ſhall or will be but a little while agoe.**

Muchos dias acá, Pocos dias acá. *fol.* 17. *a. lin.* 7. **Many daies ſince, a few daies ſince.**

Mucho tiempo há, Poco tiempo há. **A good while agoe, a little while agoe.**

Grandes dias há, Pocos dias há. **A great while agoe, a few daies paſt.**

Coſa en la vida. *fol.* 17. *a. lin.* 12. **Any thing in the world.**

Hazér cáſo. *fol.* 17. *b. lin.* 21. **To eſteeme of, to make matter of.**

Muchos ay, or Ay muchos. *fol.* 20. *a. lin.* 6. **There are many.**

Que os téngo dicho. *fol.* 20. *a. lin.* 29. **Which I haue told you.**

Quiſo mi ventura. *pag.* 21. *a. lin.* 11. **My fortune would haue it ſo.**

Que de oro no les llevára ventája. *fol.* 21. *a. lin.* 20. *verbatim.* **That the vantage of golde did not**

carrie it away from them. i. Gold did not excæde them in brightnes.

Yr a la mano *pag.21.b.lin.28.verbatim.* To goe to ones hand. i. To stop, to stay, to let or to hinder one from doing any thing.

Desdichado de mi *fol.22.b.lin.6.verbatim.* Wretched of me. i. wretch that I am, vnhappie creature I, woe is me, wretch that I am.

No te háze mucho al caso *fol.22 b.lin.11.* It makes not much matter to thee, it concernes thee not much.

De véras *fol.22.b.lin 20.* In earnest.

De burlas *fol.22.b.lin.20.* In iest.

Toda via *fol.23.a.lin.2.* Notwithstanding.

Házer de industria *fol.23.a lin 22.* To doe of set purpose.

Plegue a Dios *fol.23.b.lin.5.* I would to God.

De oy a ocho dias *fol.24 b.lin.6.* Eight daies hence.

No ay cosa en la vida *fol.25.a.lin.14.* There is nothing in the world.

Assi puso por óbra *fol.26.b.lin.11.* So he did put it in practise.

Vayan suspiros a cuentos *fol.10.a.lin.21.* Let sighes goe by millions.

Y quiéra Dios que, &c. *fol.40 b lin.4.* And would to God that, &c.

Ambos a dos *fol.46.b.lin.5.* Both.

Fuera de si *fol.47.b.lin.14.* Besides himselfe, out of his wits.

Venir a las mános *fol.47.b.lin.16.* to come to blowes or fight.

Como en ello les fuera la vida *fol.48.a.lin.11.* As if thereon his life lay.

A buelt as della *fol.48.b.lin.13.* Togither therewith.

Mal haya a aquel *fol.49.a.lin.13.* Woe be vnto him.

Poner el negócio a las manos *fol.50.b.lin.24.* To bring the matter to blowes or fight.

Que en otra cosa no entendia sino en, &c. *fol. 51.b.lin.24.verbatim.* Which in any other matter vnderstode not, i. which thought on nothing els but, &c.

Se dexó dormir *fol.52.a.lin.25.verbatim.* Let himselfe or herselfe slæpe, i. fell aslæpe.

No se qual me créa *fol.53.b.lin.19.* I know not which I may beléeue.

De vio ser *fol.53.b.lin.25.verbatim.* It ought to be, it could not be otherwise.

Basta lo hécho. *fol.54.a.lin.16.* It sufficeth that it is done. Basta lo dicho, it is enough that is once spoken of, or it nædes no more words.

Como supo callár *fol.54.a.lin.19.* How shee knew to holde her tong, how well she could be mute, and not answere a word.

Ni por pensamiénto en ella *fol.54.b.lin.13.* By no meanes.

Quererme mas que a si *fol 55.b.lin.1.* To loue me more or better then himselfe, or herselfe.

No es de cauallero *fol.55.b.lin.26.* It is not the part of a Gentleman.

Tenér en mucho, Tenér en poco. *fol.56.a.lin 2.* To esteeme much, or to set much by, to set little by, or esteeme little.

Y quien se lo dixo, Se lo supo encarescér de manera *fol.56.a.lin.25.* And he that told it, could tell how to augment and amplifie it in such sort.

Assi puse por obra *fol 56.b.lin.24.* So I put it in practise, or set it a worke.

Assi me fue derécha a la córte. *fol.57.a.lin.3.* And so I went straight to the court.

Cosas no poco gustósas de oyr. *fol.57.a.lin.5.verbatim.* Things not little tastefull to heare, i. Things not a little delightfull to heare.

En la boz, or en la habla le conoscý *fol.57.a.lin.25.* I knew him by his voice of speech.

La musica dáva a otra no a mi. *fol.58.a.lin.20.* The musicke plaied to another and not to me.

Le déva mucho. *fol.61.a.lin.9.verbatim.* Oweth him much, i. he is much beholding to him.

Esta vellaca de ausência desháze las cosas. *fol.61.a.lin.15.* This rascals absence doth vndo all.

No avrá ninguna que no se piérde por vos *fol.61.b.lin.3.* There will be none which is not lost in loue for you, i. which will not be readie to runne madde for you.

Moça bonita, or bonica. *fol.61.b.lin.5.* A good wench, a fine trull, maide or girle.

Dár lexos de la verdád. *fol.62.b.lin.13.* to be wide or farre off from the truth.

Parescér me hýa, or 12. *fol.63.a.lin.12.* It did seeme vnto me. This manner of speech in Spanish is by the figure *Epenthesis*, which is the putting in of a letter or syllable in the middle of a word, as in this Parescér me hýa, for Pareceria me, It did seeme to me.

Dár vna palmáda. *fol.63.a.lin.13.* To giue ones selfe a pat or blow on the breast, or els where in signe of wondring.

Grangeár favóres *fol.66.b.lin.5.* To hold vp fauours.

Perdido per amores, *fol.67.a.lin.22.* Lost for loue, madde in loue.

Si fuésse servído *fol.68.a.lin.9.* If he pleased, or liked well of.

Vn desmáyo con que avia dado el álma. *fol.68.a.lin.27.* A swouning or traunce, with which he had giuen vp the ghost.

Pluguiera a Dios. *fol 68.b.lin 12.* Would to God.

Llegár al álma, *fol.69.a.lin.7.* To enter into the soule, to grœue at hart.

Tomó la mano de reſpondélle. *fol.69.a.lin.9.* Tooke vpon her to anſwere her, or ſtoode vp before the companie to anſwere her.

Puſiéron la méſa. *fol.71.a.lin.15.* They couered the table.

El ſol ſe pone. *fol.72.a.lin.5.* The ſun was ſet.

Que áya ſido parte. *fol.74.a.20.* Which hath beene the cauſe.

Echár lo en burlas *fol.76.a.lin.5. verbatim.* To caſt it off in teſting, *i.* To teſt it out.

A tódos hazía ventája. *fol.76.a.lin.16.* He did excell all, he did exceede or ouerpaſſe all.

Rogándo muy encarecidaménte. *fol.76.b.lin.8.* Requeſting very earneſtly, very inſtantly.

Fulána tiene buen áyre, Fuláno, es çapateadór. *fol.79.a.lin.23.& 24.* Such a one hath a good grace or countenance, ſuch a one is dauncer of a gigge.

Pueſto en tanta obligación. *fol.80.a.lin.20.* Being ſo much beholding or bound.

Echáda a la ſombra, Echádo a la cáma. *fol.82.b.lin.2.* Laide in the ſhadowe, caſt on the bed.

Tuviéſſe por bien. *fol.82.b.lin.8. verbatim.* Did holde for good, *i.* Thought well of, or tooke in good part.

Mal áya amór, ſu arco y ſu ſaéta. *fol.83.a.lin.11.* The diuell take Loue, his bowe and his ſhafte.

Paſſallos hiá, or ia *fol.83.b.lin.7.* I woulde paſſe them ouer. Thus ſpeeth by the figure *Epenthesis*, which is a putting betweene of a letter or ſyllable in the middeſt of a worde, as Paſſallos hia, for Paſſaria los, I woulde paſſe them ouer. Alſo in Paſſallos another figure called *Antiſtoichon*, which is a writing one letter for another, by changing R of the Infinitiue moode into L, a thing moſt vſuall in the Spaniſh, as heere Paſſallos for Paſſár los, ſo Hablállos, for Hablar los, to ſpeake vnto them: Vellos, for Ver los, to ſee them: Dezillos, for Dezir los, to tell them: Oylles, or Oyllos or Oyr les, or los, to heare them.

Aviendo ydo quanro média legua, *fol.89.a.lin.21.* Hauing gone about halfe a league.

Se fue ſu paſſo a pállo. *fol.84.a.lin.6.* Went very ſoft and leiſurely.

Los demas de los dias. *fol.86.b.lin.2.* The reſt of the daies.

Y en las manos ſendos vaſos héchos a la Romána. *fol.90.b.lin.3.* And in their hands each one a ſeuerall veſſell made after the Romane faſhion.

Meſas pueſtas. *fol.91.a.lin.21.* Tables couered or laide.

Piédras engaſtádas. *fol.91.b.lin.1.* Stones enchaced.

Alcár, or quitar la méſa. *fol.91.b.lin.4.* To take vp the table.

Viſtiéron a Feliſmena, vna ropa y baſquiña de fina grána, recamádas de oro de canutillo, y aljófar, vn cuéra, y mangas de tela de plata. *fol.94.a.lin.5.* They apparelled *Feliſmena* with a gowne and peticote of fine ſcarlet colour imbrodered with imboſt or raiſd golde and pearle, a caſſocke and ſleeues of cloth of ſiuer.

Eſcofión de redezilla. *fol.94.a.lin.14.* A coife of net worke.

Las parédes eran labrádas de obra Moſáyca. *fol.94.b.lin.16.* The walls were wrote Iewiſh worke or Turkey worke without images.

Duarte. *fol.98.b.lin.19.* Edward.

Miráldebien. *fol.101.a.lin.1.* Behold him well, by the figure *Metathesis*, which is a changing places of letters, for Miráldle very common in the Spaniſh in the Imperatiue moode the ſeconde perſon plurall number, as Leeldo for Leed lo, Reade per it: Dezildo, for Dezid lo, Tell him that: or Dezildes for Dezid les, Tell them: ſo Miralda for Mirád la, Behold her: Miráldas, for Mirád las, Behold them *fol.103.a.lin.3.*

O'jos verdes y raſgádos. *fol.103.a.lin.28.* Faire and great eies.

Deſde el bórea al auſtro. *fol.104.a.lin.22.* From the nozth to the ſouth.

En quanto ſe hazía hora de cenár ſe fuéron a vna alaméda. *fol.105.a.lin.16.* And while ſupper time came they went to a grone of poplars.

Mediante la quel *fol.109.a.lin.24.* By meanes whereof.

Gentil hombre y bien talládo *fol.110.a.lin.13.* A proper man and well ſhaped, and not for as Engliſh men call gentleman.

Cavallo rúcio rodádo. *fol.110.a.lin.15.* A horſe dapple graie.

Traýa en la cinta vn alfánje. *fol.110.a.lin.19.* He caried at his girdle a Turkie ſword.

Traýa en el bráço yſquierdo. *fol.110.a.lin.24.* He caried on his left arme.

Bolvér ſobre ſi. *fol.110.b.lin.21.* To come to ones ſelfe as out of a traunce, aſtoniſhment or the like.

Tocár un cuerno. *fol.111.a.lin.16. verbatim.* To touch. *i.* To winde a horne.

Llevár el camino de los compañéros. *fol.111.a.lin.19. verbatim.* To carrie the way of his fellowes. *i.* To take the ſame way, to be ſerued with the ſame ſauce, to drinke of the ſame cup.

Túvo lo en mucho. *fol.113.a.lin.9.* He much eſteemed it.

De ay algunos dias. *fol.116.a.lin.18.* From hence a few daies.

Tenérme campo. *fol.119.a.lin.5. verbatim.* To hold me field. *i.* To be able to ſtand with me or fight with me.

Hazér campo. *verbatim.* To make field. *i.* To combat, to fight.

No ſe lo que hará de mi. *fol.119.a.lin.18.* I know not what ſhall become of me.

Tenéd entendido.*fol.*126.*b.lin.*2.*verbatim.* Hold vnderstood.*i.* Vnderstand.
Ambas a dos.*fol.*126.*b.lin.*27. Both.
Pléga a Dios *fol.*130.*b.lin.*24. I would to God.
Por lo poco que se dáva por el.*fol.*133.*a.lin.*23. For the little estæme he made of him.
No se me da náda.*verbatim.* It giues nothing to me.*i.* I care not.
Avrá como cinco o seys méses.*fol.*147.*a.lin.*3. It shall be some fiue or sixe monethes.
Cosa en que tan poco te yva.*fol.*149.*a.lin.*19. A thing which so little did import thee.
Me a dádo de mano.*fol.*150.*a.lin.*26. He hath taken his leaue of me.
Fálda de unas montañas *fol.*157.*b.lin.*13 *verbatim.* the skirt.*i.* The side or hanging of an hill.
Vino a dár en un bosque muy grande, de verdes alisos y azebúches assaz poplado. *fol.*158.*a.lin.*2. He came to light into a wood very great, sufficiently stored with græne sallowes and wilde oliues.
Y de súbito fue a dár con los ojos en una muy hermosa ciudád, que desde de lo alto de una sierra, que de frente estáva.*fol.*158.*a.lin.*6. And vpon a sudden he espied a faire citie from the top of a mountaine, which was right against them.
Se fué su passo a passo por una senda que júnto a l rio yva házia la parte. *fol.*158. *b.lin.*6. He went faire and soft in a path which lead nære the riuer toward that part, &c.
Sobre las cabeças, tenian sendas guirnaldas de verde yedra. *fol.*158.*b.lin.*18. Upon their heads they had each of them seuerall garlands of græne iuie.
Con cierto desdén y un dár de mano. *fol.*160.*a.lin.*12. With a certaine disdaine and putting from with the hand.
Dize pues que su mugér es finada que me case con el? *fol.*160.*a.lin.*24. Saith he, seeing that his wife is dead, that I marrie with him?
Paréd en médio bivir.*fol.*190 *b.lin.*28. To liue at the next wall, but one wall betweene.
Parár mientes.*fol.*193.*a.lin.*21. To marke, to hæde.
Plazér acabádo.*fol.*226.*a.lin.*12. Complete or full ioy or pleasure quite ended.

Diana de Monte Mayor 2. part.

Encaminár obras a personas de lustre.*fol.*2.*a.lin.*5. To direct workes to persons of fame.
Si Dios fuére servido.*fol.*2.*b.lin.*7.*verbatim.* If God shall be serued.*i.* If it shall please God.
De mi grádo jamas entendiéra sino en solo loáros.*fol.*3.*a.lin.*7. By my good will I would neuer do any thing else but praise you.
Vaya fuera toda arrogáncia *fol.*3.*b.lin.*12. All pride set aside.
Como a cada uno complia.*fol.*7.*a.lin.*2. As was mæte for euery one.
No les comple yr se.*fol.*7.*b.lin.*20. It is not mæte they goe.
Con el si del matrimónio.*fol.*8.*a.lin.*26. With the answering to the minister yea at the mariage.
Vámonos *fol.*10.*a.lin.*10. Let vs goe, for Vamos nos.
Dexémonos.*fol.*19.*a.lin.*22. Let vs leaue, for Dexémos nos.
Amatár la sed *fol.*10.*a.lin.*20. To quench thirst.
Por una cuésta abaxo.*fol.*11.*b.lin.*11. Downehill.
A vézes.*fol.*21.*a.lin.*1. By turnes, by fits.
O vala me Dios.*fol.*22.*a.lin.*6. God helpe me.
Pluguiéra a Dios *fol.*22.*a.lin.*17. I would to God.
Dado que *fol.*22.*b.lin.*21. Grant that, suppose that.
Merced señaláda.*fol.*28.*b.lin.*26. A notable curtesie.
El traydór del Cupido *fol.*36.*b.lin.penultima.* The traitor Cupide.
Tenér en mucho *fol.*38.*b.lin.*1. To esteeme much of.

Wordes, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbes out of *Celestina* in 8.
printed at Antwerpe En la oficina Plantiniana
Anno 1595.

De mas.*pag.*1.*lin.*5. Ouer and aboue, besides, moreouer.
Recebído tienen.*pag.*3.*lin.*6.*verbatim.* They hold received.*i.* They haue received.
Tenér la firma del autor.*pag.*4.*lin.*21. To haue the authors name to it.
Leeldo.*pag.*8.*lin.*9. Read it, by the figure *Metathesis*, which is a changing of places of letters, very common in the Spanish in the seconde person plurall of the Imperatiue mode, as this Leeldo for Leed lo, as Castigaldo, chastise him, for Castigad lo, Pedilde, require of him, for Pedid le, Oylde, heare him, for oyd le.
A tódo correr devéis de huir. *pag.*10.*lin.*11. *verbatim.* With all running away you ought to auoide.*i.* With all haste possible to run or shun.

En

En quien quépa eſta differéncia. *pag.17.lin.14.* In whom may be contained or found this difference.

Conſéjatras de fuego. *pag.13.lin.3.* A tale by the fires ſide, an old wiues tale.

Ofrecido tenér. *pag.22.lin.13. verbatim.* To hold offered. *i.* To haue offered.

Vete, vete de ay. *pag.23.lin.18.* Get thee hence, get thee hence.

Abatióſe el girafalte. *pag.23.lin.28.* The Gerfaulcon bated.

Los Diablos te gánen. *pag.24.lin.1.* The Deuill take thee.

Que coſa es? *pag.24.lin.20.* What is the matter?

Dexárle he? *pag.25.lin.2.* Shall I leaue him?

Matárſe ha. *pag.25.lin.3.* He is to kill himſelfe, or he will kill himſelfe.

Desbráve, Madúre. *pag.25.lin.15.* Let him pacifie or calme himſelfe, let him ripen or come to a head.

Si delante me tiéne. *pag.25.lin.22.* If he haue me before him.

Mudár el pelo malo. *pag.25.lin.29.* To change ill fortune.

Ves lo aquí. *pag.26.lin.15.* See it here.

De la aparéncia a la exiſténcia. *pag.27.lin.14.* From that which ſeemes to be, to that which is indéede.

No cabe en coraçón de mi ámo. *pag.28.lin.6.* It is not within the compaſſe of my maſters hart.

Que por la boca le ſale a borbollónes. *pag.28.lin 6.* But that it muſt bubble out of his mouth.

Ha, ha, ha, & Hi, hi, hi. *pag.28.lin.14.* Voices of laughing.

Aſſeſtár tiros. *pag 28.lin.17.* To aime.

Eſcozióte. *pag.30.lin.27.* It touchte you, it made you ſmart.

Metér por los agujéros. *pag. 32.lin.25. verbatim.* To put into holes, *i.* to take in at windowes.

Deſque ſe deſcúbren. *pag.33.lin.12.* From the time they diſcouer themſelues.

Cativo de mi, Meſquino de mi. *pag.34.lin.20.* Wretch that I am.

Aſſi me médre Dios, Aſſi te medre Dios. *pag.34.lin.23. verbatim.* So God make me thriue, *i.* So God helpe me or proſper me.

Duelos tenémos. *pag.34.lin.28.* We haue mourning in hand.

Ojos verdes y raſgádos. *pag.35.lin.14.* Faire and great eies.

La tez liza y luſtroſa. *pag.35.lin.24.* The ſkin ſmoth and cleere.

Buen ándo haze eſto. *pag.37.lin.8.* This makes good going forward.

Dias grándes ha, or Múchos dias ha. *pag.37.lin.5.* A good while ſince.

Quede Dios con. v.m. *pag.37.lin.29.* God be with you, or God remaine with you.

Dios vaya con v.m. *pag.37.lin.29.* God conduct, or be your ſpeed.

Vaya v.m. con Dios. Goe in Gods name.

Que es del? *pag.38.lin.15.* What is become of him? where is he?

Hi, hi, hi. *pag.39.lin.2.* A voice of laughing.

Tres dias ha. *pag.39.lin.4.* It hath beene three daies.

Vo, for Voy. *pag.39.lin.12.* I goe.

Por mi vída, Por tu vida. *pag.39.lin.27.* I pray thee hartily.

Quedate a Dios. *pag.40.lin.11.* God remaine with you, or keepe you.

Sey, for Se tu. *pag.40.lin.21.* Be thou.

No púde deſſeár bien, de que no te cupiéſſe parte. *pag.41.lin.1.* I could not ſo much as deſire, as with any goodnes, in which thy part was not contained therein.

Si quiéra, for Soláménte. *pag.41.lin.4.*

Gelo prometi. *pag.41.lin.28.* I promiſed him it or that, for Se lo prometí.

Tha, tha, tha. *pag.42.lin.3.* The noiſe or beating of the knocking at a doore.

O que comedór de huévos aſſados. *pag.43.lin.21.* Oh what a eater of roaſted egges.

De que le ſervías? *pag.44.lin.4.* In what place or office diddeſt thou ſerue her in?

Curár de punto, *pag 47.lin.18.* To heale or cure with ſtitching vp, as with needle and threed.

Téngote ſo en grácia, or mercéd. *pag.48.lin.24.* I thanke thee for it.

Como quiera. *pag.49.lin.29.* Howſoeuer.

Dar en el fiel. *pag.51.lin.4.* To hit the pricke at ſhooting.

Para mi ſantiguáda. *pag.51.lin.13.* By my halidome.

Do víno el aſno, verná el albarda. *pag.51.lin.13. verbatim.* Where the aſſe is come, the packe ſaddle will come. *i.* where the greater doth preide, the leſſe muſt of neceſſitie come after.

AFter I had read ouer *Diana de Monte mayor*, and other authors, gathering out the hardeſt ſpeeches and explaining them for the learners vſe, and being come thus farre in *Celeſtine*, as you ſee, it came into my imagination that running thorow him and ſuch other hard authors, by vnfolding ſo open to euerie ones

view

view the difficulteſt points in the toong, might breede ſome diſlike in men of mine owne profeſſion (to whom I wiſh as to my ſelfe) as alſo little thankefulnes of others, who hauing their turns ſerued, do commonly verifie this prouerbe, (Eaten bread is forgotten.) I thought good not to deale all at once, but to keepe ſome to ſweeten their mouthes heereafter, as they ſhall be deſirous heereof, and the rather, for that notwithſtanding all this and more paines to, with coſt out of my purſe, neglecting my profeſſion and liuing, I haue alreadie before I came neere the preſſe, taſted and had ſome experience of ſome of the greater ſorte (if wealth and place haue that prerogatiue) which neuer ſawe any thing of my dooing in their life, or heard mee ſpeake, by diſcourteous dealing enough to diſcourage mee from the publiſhing of any thing, to pleaſure or profit many; yet for the better minded, and more curteous diſpoſed, I heere go ſo farre with the Engliſhing heereof, and ſome prouerbes following, whoſe curteſie if friendly I finde, may cauſe me to the farther vnfolding of this language to his farther content.

Words, Phraſes, Sentences and Prouerbs out of *La vida de Lázaro de Tormes in* 8 *printed in Antwerpe En la oficina Plantiniána, Anno M. D. XCV.*

Lo que uno no cóme, otro ſe pierde por ello. *pag.* 2. *lin.* 13. That which one eateth not, another is loſt for it, or longeth after it.

No ſer mas ſanto que mis vezinos. *pag.* 5. *lin.* 7. Not to be more holy then my neighbours.

Achacáron a mi padre ciertas ſangrias mal hechas en los coſtáles. *pag.* 7. *lin.* 18. They laid to my fathers charge certaine ripping the ſides of the ſacks.

Arrimár a los buenos *pag.* 8. *lin.* 7. *pag* 91. *lin.* 1. To leane or ſtay ones ſelfe vpon the good.

Echár la ſoga tras el caldéro. *pag.* 10. *lin.* 12. *verbatim.* To caſt the rope after the caldron. *i.* To caſt the helue after the hatchet.

Vale te por ti. *pag.* 11. *lin.* 16. *verbatim.* Be of auaile for thy ſelfe. *i.* Shift for thy ſelfe.

Par de una coſa. *pag.* 11. *lin.* 26. Just euen with any thing.

Mas da el duro que el deſnúdo. *pag.* 19. *lin.* 28. *verbatim.* More giueth the hard then the naked. *i.* More giueth the miſer or curmudgeon then he that hath it not to giue.

Eſcapé del truéno y di en el Relampágo. *pag.* 28 *lin.* 23. I eſcaped the thunder and fell into the lightening.

No podér tener en las piernas. *pag.* 30. *lin.* 25. Not to be able to ſtand vpon the legs.

Dar el relóx la una, Dar las dos, las tres, &c. *pag.* 49. *lin.* 15. The clocke to ſtrike one, two or three.

Ha dado la una, Han dado las dos, las tres, &c. *pag.* 50. *lin.* 25. It hath ſtrooke one a clocke, two a clocke, three a clocke.

En un crédo. *pag.* 57. *lin.* 14. In the twinkling of an eie.

Uña de vaca. *pag.* 62. *lin.* 1. A neates foote.

La bolſa ſin maldita la blanca. *pag.* 65. *lin.* 16. The diuell a penny in his purſe.

Oy dia. *pag.* 65. *lin.* 24. At this day.

Que brémos el ojo al Diáblo. *pag.* 66. *lin.* 7. Let vs breake the necke of the Deuil.

Voto or boto a Dios. *pag.* 70. *lin.* 4. I ſo care by God.

Del rey abaxo. *pag.* 71. *lin.* 6. From the king downeward.

Rompér çapatos. *pag.* 77. *lin.* 13. To weare out ſhoes.

Lançár del el demónio. *pag.* 85. *lin.* 8. To caſt out the diuell from him.

Matár con un hombre. *pag.* 92. *lin.* 6. To fight with a man.

Quien bien te hará o ſe yrá o ſe morirá. *pag.* 94. *lin.* 7. He that ſhall or will doe thee a good turne, either he will be gon, or he will die.

Words, Phraſes, Sentences and Prouerbs out of *Menoſprécio de la Corte, or in French* Meſpris de la Court *in* 16. *printed An. M. D. XCI.* per Iehan de Tournes.

Yr me a mi a la mano. *pag.* 70. *lin.* 19. *verbatim.* To goe me to my hand. *i.* To hinder, let or ſtop my ſelfe.

Ir por el atájo. *pag.* 93. *lin.* 14. To goe the ſhorteſt way.

Dar de mano a la corte. *pag.* 127. *lin.* 20. To ſhake hands or take leaue of the Court.

Dar

Dár la corte a Dios. *pag.* 137. *lin.* 10. To bid the court farewell.
Andár en cuérpo. *pag.* 197. *lin.* 1. To goe in hoſe and doublet without a cloake.
No es de paſſár entre renglónes. *pag.* 200. *lin.* 20. It is not to be left obſcurely, or it is to be plainely written or ſet downe.
Verdúra para la olla. *pag.* 202. *lin.* 19. Hearbes for the pot, pothearbes.
Bevér de buçes. 209. *lin.* 5. To drinke as an oxe or ſuch beaſtes.
Jugár al herrón. *pag.* 227. *lin.* 13. To play at coites.
Corrér vn toro. *pag.* 228. *lin.* 3. To baite a bull.
A paréd y medio, pared en medio. com. Plauto. *fol.* 4. *b. lin.* 18. *pag.* 234. *lin.* 13. The next wall to one, But a wall betweene.
Clérigo ſin breviário. *pag.* 259. *lin.* 8. A prieſt without a breuiarie.
Ruár calles. *pag.* 273. *lin.* 14. To gad about the ſtreetes.
A pénas. 289. *lin.* 20. Hardly.
Embocár la bola al juego de argólla. *pag* 360. *lin.* 2. To caſt the bowle into the hole of the ring at that play of Argolla, *i.* A ring.
Tirár cocces. *pag* 380. *lin.* 10. To kicke.
Traér de tema la gorra. *pag.* 388. *lin.* 12. To ſet his hat to the good alewarde, on one ſide the head.
Soſpécho que ſon pocos, y muy pocos, y aun muy poquitos y muy repoquitos. *pag.* 406. *lin.* 1. I ſuſpect there are few and very few, yea moſt few, yea feweſt of all.

Wordes, Phraſes, Sentences, and Prouerbes out of *Floreſta Eſpañola, in* 16. *Printed in Salamanca,* 1592.

Eſtoy maravillado. *Epiſt. dedicatoria. pag.* 2 *lin.* 9. I wonder, I maruell.
El linage donde no avia corona, nunca medrava. *fol.* 6. *b. lin* 4. *verbatim.* That kindred that had had a crowne in it neuer thriued. *i.* a prieſt.
Mas paréce chichón, que Cardinál. *fol.* 7. *b. lin.* 1. It ſeemed rather a whelke or puſtle then a ſtripe blacke and blew.
Rézias cámaras. *fol.* 11. *a. lin.* 18. Strong ſtoolings.
Macho de filla. *fol.* 13. *a. lin.* 15. A nagge.
Vn hombre de gran memória ſin letras, tiene rueca y huſo y no eſtambre. *fol.* 21. *a. lin.* 1. A man of great memorie without learning, hath a rocke and a ſpindle, and no ſtuffe to ſpin.
Bolár vna grulla o ave. *fol.* 43 *b. lin.* 5. To flie at the Herron.
Guiſár la comida. *fol.* 43. *b. lin.* 6. To dreſſe meate.
Deſenſillár. *fol.* 53. *b. lin.* 19. To put out of a chaire. Alſo to vnſaddle.
Vnos moços de eſpuelas. *fol.* 60. *b. lin.* 1 Lackeies or footemen.
A eſſe Page o capalde o encapalde. *fol.* 61. *b. lin.* 18. Either gelde this page or giue a cloake.
Tal cádreda vaca. *fol.* 74. *b. lin.* 2. Such a chaire was vacant.
Llámo me. *fol.* 76. *a. lin.* 15. I call my ſelfe, or I am called.
Puntos de çapátos. *fol.* 85. *b. lin.* 14. The ſtitches of ſhoes, or ſize of ſhoes, as nines, tens, &c.
Al freýr lo veréys. *fol.* 93. *a. lin. penultima, verbatim.* By frying you ſhall ſee. *i.* By proofe you ſhall finde.
Os demande la palabra. *fol.* 94. *b. lin.* 2. Let him challenge your word or promiſe.
Hazér quartos. *fol* 90. *a. lin.* 3. To quarter.
Parár mientes. *fol.* 500. *a. lin* 7 To marke.
Caldo. *fol.* 102, *b. lin.* 5. Broth, pottage.
Hazér la barba. *fol* 112. *a. lin.* 16 To trim the beard.
De buena gana *fol.* 226. *b. lin.* 5. With a good will.
Dezir grácias. *fol.* 234. *a. lin.* 18. To ſpeake merrie conceits.

Marco Aurelio.

Sublimár, abatír. *pag.* 11. *lin.* 18. To lift vp and to abaſe.
A ley de bueno os juro *pag.* 27. *lin.* 28. By the faith of a good man I ſweare.
Conviene a ſabér. *pag.* 42. *lin.* 16. That is to wit.
Sobrepujár *pag.* 46. *lin.* 11. To ouerpoiſe.
Pendón de taverna. *pag.* 51. *lin.* 9. The ſigne of a tauerne.
Jugár al avedrés. *pag.* 59. *lin.* 20. To play at Cheſſe.
Poner obligación. *pag.* 234. *lin.* 26. to binde, to make one beholding to him.
Ponér el águila en los péchos. *pag.* 245. *lin.* 20. To put the Eagle on his breaſt. *i.* To weare the Emperours armes the Eagle.

Armár

Armár ſancadílla.*pag.*256.*lin.*2. To trip.
Cavallo de axedréz.*pag.*279.*lin.*26. The Knight at Cheſſe.

De Comédia de Plauto Milite glorioſo in 16. printed at Antwerp M. D. LV.

Fletár vna náo.*fol.*8.*b.lin.*19. To hire a ſhip and pay paſſage money.
Hazér a lo largo en la mar.*fol.*8.*b.lin.*23. To lanch into the maine at ſea.
Dios te pague.*fol.*12.*a.lin.*11. God rewarde thee.
Ponér o Hazer lumbre.*fol.*17.*a.lin.*23. To make a fire.
El puerco muerto ſabe mas quando ſe come. *fol.*22.*a.lin.*25. A dead hog taſteth beſt when he is eaten.
Hermáno del leche.*fol.*25.*b.lin.*17. A foſter brother.
Poco me doy por eſſo.*fol.*28.*b.lin.*19. Little care I for this.
Ordir tramas.*fol.*29.*b.lin.*8. *verbatim.* To ſpin webs, *i.* To worke deceites.

Comédia de *Plauto Menechmos*, in 16. bound with *Milite glorioſo.*

Para que ſe ténga en mas.*fol.*54.*b.lin.*16. That he or it may be more eſteemed.
Ambos a dos mancebos.*fol.*55.*b.lin.*15. Both the yong men.
No perdáys palabra *fol.*56.*b.lin.*10. *verbatim.* Doe not loſe a word, *i.* Be attentiue to that one ſhall ſay.
Hazér de nuéuas con alguno. *fol.*67.*a.lin.*19. To make himſelfe ſtrange with one, when he knoweth him well enough.

Araucana in 16. three in one volumne, Printed in *Antwerp.* 1597.

Cúchilla de la montáña. Elógio.*pag.*3.*lin.*8. The edge or ridge of a hill.
Rociada dar. Elogio.*pag.*3.*lin.*12. To giue a volley of ſhot.
Como conſta por ſus óbras. Elogio.*pag.*7.*lin.*5. As appeareth by his workes.
Medir la pica al enimigo.*fol.*3.*b.lin* 33 To come to puſh of a pike with the enimie.
Poblados penáchos.*fol.*4.*a.lin.*32. Thicke plumes of feathers.
Hazérſe a lo largo.*fol.* 3.*a.lin.*10. *verbatim.* To make himſelfe aloofe, *i.* To ſtep out as men in a quarrell to draw their weapon.
A riénda ſuélta.*fol.*31.*b.lin.penult. verbatim.* With a looſe raine of a bridle, *i.* at libertie, freelie, as Reýr a riénda ſuélta. To laugh freely, at libertie.

I would goe forward in this courſe of ſeeking hard places and phraſes in Authors, but for that I haue now much other buſines that neerer concernes me, onely certaine Prouerbes which I haue heretofore for mine owne vſe gathered, and here leaue ſome of them to your vſe, as ye ſhall beſt like them.

Refranes. Prouerbes.

Firſt ſetting downe the Engliſh worde for worde according to the Spaniſh, with this worde Verbatim. *Afterwarde if it haue a ſence differing from the worde, the meaning thus,* i. *for* id eſt: *that is to ſaie.*

NO puede ſer mas negro el cuervo que ſus álas. *verbatim.* The crowe can not be blacker then his wings. *i.* Nothing can exceede the higheſt degree.
Quien a ſu enemigo popa, a ſus manos muere. *verbatim.* Whoſoeuer diſdainfully dallies with his enimie, dies by his owne hande. *i.* by making no reckoning of his enimie, receaues damage.
Quien cóme y dexa, dos veces póne la meſa. *verbatim.* Who dineth and leaueth for another time, couers the table twiſe. *i.* He that keepeth in ſtore, ſeaueth his turne when he hath neede.
Gran ſabór es comér y no eſcotar. *verbatim.* It is great ſauorines to dine or eate, and not to paie any ſhot or reckoning. *i.* Good drinking of wine of another mans purſe.

La

La codícia rómpe el ſaco. *verbatim.* Couetouſnes burſteth the bagge. *i.* neuer thinketh it full till it breake.

Mas véen quatro ójos que no dos. *verbatim.* Fower eies ſee better then two. *i.* Two heades are better then one.

Mas vale páxaro en máno que bueytre belándo. *verbatim.* Better a birde in hand then a Vultur flying. *i.* A birde in hand worth ten in the buſh.

E'ntre hermános, no metas tus manos: Porque, quien los deſparte, lleua la peor parte. *verbat.* Betweene brothers put not thou thy hands; for who ſo ſeuers them hath the worſt of it.

Ni de eſtópa buen camiſa, ni de pura buena amiga. *verbatim.* Neither of hurdes is made a good ſhirt, nor of a queane a good louer.

Quien ha officio ha benificio. *verbatim.* He that hath an occupation or office hath a benefite and a benefice.

En la boca cerrada no entra moſca. *verbatim.* In a cloſed vp mouth a flie cannot get in.

Mas cerca eſtán mis dientes que mis pariéntes. *verbatim.* My teeth are nærer to me then my kinred. *i.* Nærer is my coate, but nærer is my ſhirt.

Mas vale ſer cabeça de Ratón, que cola de León. *verbatim.* Better to be the head of a Mouſe then the taile of a Lyon. *i.* Better be chiefe in a meane place, then vnderling in a greater.

Da Dios hávas, a quien no tiene quixádas. *verbatim.* God giueth beanes to them that haue no iawes to eate them. *i.* God ſends fooles fortune.

A cavallo comedór cabéstro corto. *verbatim.* To a greedie eating horſe, a ſhort halter. *i.* To a prodigall man meane fortune: a curſt cowe ſhort hornes.

Dime con quien ándas, y dezirte he quien éres. *verbatim.* Tell me with whom thou goeſt, and I will tell thee what thou art. *i.* Birdes of a feather will flocke togither; like will to like.

En la boca del diſcréto, Lo público es ſecreto. *verbatim.* In the wiſemans mouth, That is manifeſt is kept ſecret.

Piedra movedíza, no cria moho. *verbatim.* The rolling ſtone engenders no moſſe.

Mas vale ſabér, que avér. *verbatim.* It is better to haue knowledge then riches.

Quien mal en horna, ſaca los panes tuertos. *verbatim.* He that ſetteth in the bread in the ouen naughtily, drawеth out the loaues crulhed awrie: as one brewes ſo let him drinke: as one plots ſo it prooues.

Quien da preſto, da dos vézes. *verbatim.* He that giues quickly, giueth twiſe.

Miédo guarda viña y no viñadéro *verbatim.* Feare keepeth and looketh to the vineyard and not the owner. *i.* Feare makes one looke about.

A muértos y a ýdos no ay amigos. *verbatim.* To dead men and abſent there are no friendes left. *i.* Out of ſight out of minde.

La cóz de la yégua no haze mal al pótro. *verbatim.* The kicke of the mare hurteth not the colt. *i.* A friends reproſe neuer doth ill.

A vn traydór dos alevóſos. *verbatim.* To one traitor, two traitors. *i.* To ouer reach one craftie knaue, ſet two craftie knaues to him and they will conycatch him. The Italian ſaith, *A vn fino, vn fino & mezo.*

Jurado ha el vaño de negro, no hazér blanco. *verbatim.* The bath of the blackmoore hath ſworne not to whiten. *i.* That which is bred in the bone will neuer out of the fleſh.

En caſa del meſquino, manda mas la mugér que el marido. *verbatim.* In the houſe of the ſimple ſoule, the wife commands more then the husband. *i.*
In the houſe of the ſilly man of neceſſitie and of foꝛe:
The graie mare will ſtill prooue the better horſe.

Es mas el ruýdo, que las nuezes. *verbatim.* The noiſe is greater then the nuts. *i.* More afraid then hurt.

Dos pardáles en vna eſpíga, házen mala liga. *verbatim.* Two ſparrowes on one eare of corne make an ill agreement. *i.* Two competitors cannot accorde.

No es tan bravo el León como le pintan. *verbatim.* The Lion is not ſo fierce as they paint him. *i.* He is ſuch a one as he makes ſhewe of.

En hora buena nace, quien buena fama cóbra. *verbatim.* He is borne in a good houre that gets himſelfe a good name. *i.* A good name is better then riches.

De baxo de mala capa, yaze buen bevedór. *verbatim.* Under a bad cloake lies a good drinker. *i.* The worſe outwardly attired, the better inwardly lined.

De rábo de puérco, nunca buen viróte. *verbatim.* Of a pigges taile you can neuer make a good ſhaft. *i.* Play a foole in a morter you cannot make him leaue his foolie: a clowne will neuer bee made a king.

Que es eſſe hidalgo? El que háze las obras. *verbatim.* What is this gentleman. *i.* Who is to be a gentleman? Euen he that doth the workes of a gentleman.

El aſno ſufre la cárga, no la ſobre cárga. *verbatim.* The aſſe endureth his burden, but not more then his burden.

Amenczados pán cómen. *verbatim.* Threatened men eate bread. *i.* The threatened men liue long.

Piénſa

Piénſa el ladrón,que todos ſon de ſu condición. *verbatim.* The theefe thinketh that all are of his condition,*i.* Euerie one iudgeth another by himſelfe.

Mas vale vn tóma que dos te daré. *verbatim.* One hold is better then two I will giue thee. Once giuing is better then often promiſing.

No ſe gána çamóra en vn hóra. *verbatim.* çamóra (a ſtrong towne) is not wonne in an houer,*i.* Rome was not built in a day.

Quién tiémpo tiene,y tiémpo atiende,tiémpo viéne, que ſe arrepiénte. *verbatim.* He that hath time, and lookes for better time,Time comes that he repent himſelfe of time.

Buén coraçón quebránta mála ventura. *verbatim.* A good hart breaketh ill hap,*i.* A good hart ouercommeth all.

Mundo redondo quién no ſabe nadár vaſe en hóndo. *verbatim.* Round world, he that cannot ſwim let him ſinke to the bottome.

Malas ſon las búrlas verdadéras. *verbatim.* True ieſtes are ill,*i.* It is ill to ieſt at that which was done in deed.

Quién te háze fiéſta, que no lo ſuéle hazér,o te quiére engañár,o te ha menéſtér. *verbatim.* Who ſo maketh much of thee that was not wont,either will deceiue or ſtands in neede of thee.

Quién a ſólas come el gállo,a ſólas enſilla ſu cavállo. *verbatim.* Whoſoeuer eates the cocke alone, ſaddles the horſe alone,*i.* He that will keepe his meate and his money to himſelfe, muſt doe his buſines himſelfe.

Ház bien y no cates a quién,haz mal y guárte. *verbatim.* Doe good and regard not to whom,doe euill and take heede of thy ſelfe.

Quién a buén árbol ſe arrima buéna ſombra le cobíja. *verbatim.* Whoſoeuer leaneth to a good tree, getteth a good ſhadow,*i.* Whoſoeuer hath a ſure man to truſt vnto,hath a great pleaſure.

Quien no paréce peréce. *verbatim.* Who appeareth not,periſheth,*i.* Out of ſight,out of minde.

Biva comigo y búſca quien te manténga. *verbatim.* Liue with me, and ſeeke ſome other that may maintaine thee,*i.* Doe me ſeruice,and get maintenance where thou canſt.

Hónra y provécho,no cáben en vn ſáco. *verbatim.* Honour and profit are not contained togither in one ſacke,*i.* If you be honorable,you muſt be liberall and not reſpect your money.

Quien quita l'ocaſión,quita el pecádo. *verbatim.* He that taketh awaie the occaſion, taketh away the offence,*i.* He that remoueth the allurements taketh away the ſinne.

La pobréza no es viléza mas inconveniéncia. *verbatim.* Pouertie is no vile or vitious matter, but yet an inconuenience.

Las quéntas en la máno,y el diáblo en el capíllo. *verbatim.* The beades in the hand,and the diuell in his capuch or cape of his cloake,*i.* God in his mouth and the diuell in his hart: good words and wicked deeds.

Palábras y plúmas el viénto las lléva. *verbatim.* Words and feathers the winde carrieth away,*i.* Words are but winde.

Ni Sávado ſin ſól ni moça ſin amór,ni véjo ſin dolór. *verbatim.* Neither Saboath without ſunne, nor yong wench without loue,nor an old body without griefe or ache.

Fuégo de eſtópa, Fire of flaxe,
Amór de púta, Loue of a queane,
Viénto del cúlo, Winde from the taile,
Tódo es vno, All is one.

Guárdate
- De yra de Señór y de alboróto de puéblo. — Of the wrath of a mightie man & the tumult of the people.
- De lócos en lugár eſtrécho, — Of mad fooles in a narrow place.
- De hónra menguáda, y génte que no tiéne náda. — Of credit decaied, and people which haue nothing.
- De móça adeuína, y mugér latína. — Of a yong wench a prophetelle, and a latin woman.
- De perſóna ſeñaláda, y de Biúda tres vézes caſáda. — Of a perſon marked, & a widow thrife married.
- De lódos al caminár, y de luénga enfermedád. — Of foule durtie waies and long ſickenes.
- De viénto que entre per horádo, y de enimígo que ſéa reconciliádo. — Of wind that comes in at a hole, and of a reconciled enimy.
- De madráſta, el nombre le báſta. — Of a ſtepmother, the very name of her ſufficeth.

FINIS.

PLEASANT and DELIGHTFVLL DIALOGVES IN SPANISH

and Engliſh, profitable to the learner,
and not vnpleaſant to any
other Reader.

By IOHN MINSHEV Profeſſor
of Languages in
London.

Vireſcit vulnere Virtus.

Imprinted at London, by
Edm. Bollifant.
1599

Al muy illustre Señor, Don Eduardo Hobby: su aficionado servidor *Juan Minsheu* deséa salúd, y perpetua felicidád.

Muy illustre Señor, de aquel famoso pintor Apeles *se quenta, que aviendo acabado de pintár vna hermosa tabla, temendola colgada en parte pública; innumerable gente de todas suertes combidáda de la lindeza della, suspendiéron su curso, y se detuviéron a contemplárla, entre los de mas, se acertó a llegár vn rústico labradór, y como todos alabássen grandemente el ingénio del artifice, juntamente con la pintura: el villáno con boz ronca y mal compuesta, díxo, vna gran falta tiene ésta tabla; lo qual como oyesse* Apeles, *le preguntó qual fuesse ésta? El respondió, aquella espiga sobre la qual está aquel páxaro sentado, devriéra estár mas inclinada, porque conforme al peso que presuppone el páxaro y la flaquéza de la caña, no podia sustemár le sin doblarse mas, oydo ésto por el pintór, vió que tenia razón el villáno; y tomando el pincél, emendó luego aquella falta, siguiendo su parecér; sobérbio pues el rústico con ver que se uviésse tomado su voto, passó mas adelante, y díxo, aquellos çapatos que aquella figura tiene no están buennos, a ésto le respondió* Apeles, *Hermano cura de tu arte, y dexa a cada vno el suyo. Está figura, muy illustre señor, he querído traér, por dezír, que si todos los hombres se conformássen con lo que sáuen y que su ingénio alcança, no quisiéssen passár adelante, a sabér lo que no es de su profesión ny les toca, ny ellos quedarían corridos, como éste villáno, ni el labradór se entremeteria a tratár de la guerra, ny el mercadér de la cavallaría, ny el oficiál de las sciéncias, ny el herréro se pondria a disputár puntos de teología; Sino que tratando cada vno aquello a que su capacidád se estiende, y no mas, seria vn concierto maravillóso, que resultaría en grande vtilidád de toda la república, y para ésto devríamos tomár exemplo en las cosas naturales, las quales perpetuamente guárdan su órden y conciérto, sin entremetérse las vnas a hazér el oficio de las otras, y ansi vémos que ny la tierra caliénta, ny el fuego produze, ny el viento riéga, ny el agua ventéa, sino que cada cosa tiene su calidád y oficio particulár. Pues aviéndose de guardár éste conciérto y órden, a v.m. conviene y toca el juzgár de ésta mi obra, como aquel que entre todos los demas, tiene el primado de la lengua Española, segun la facilidád con que se le a dádo, y la perfecion con que la habla, peró tambien en otras muchas sciéncias, y facultádes, en que v. m. resplandéce sobre todos los de nuestro tiempo. Aqui no es de olvidár la refulgente, rara y acabada perfecion en hermosura, doctrina, lenguas, de la muy illustre Señora Doña* Margarita *su muger de v.m. Dios sabe, si yo quisiera dedicár le toda la obra entera y no partida en parte, (pues quando no uviéra las razones dichas para hazérlo; bastava el agradecimiento y benevoléncia, que v. m. mostró al que primero emprendió lo que he yo ampliado, y hecho mas copioso: Peró el lo dexádo de hazer, por dos razones a my júyzio; la vna es la obligación precisa que tengo a las personas a quien va derigida, no solo de obediencia y amistád, sino tambien de ayuda, favór, y socorro que me han dado para podér llegarla a su fin; y la otra razón es, a verse começado, prosegui-*

guido,

quido, y acabado en ſu nombre, y para que ſe apovéchan della, en ſu minſtério. Peró ya que lo que es mayór en cantidád tengo empleado, lo que es ygual en calidád, o freſco y dedíco a. v.m. y ésto mas por lo que a mi importa, pues quedaré ſeguro que los detractores no oſen mordér en lo que ha ſido cenſurádo por tan primo júyzio y entendimiento, que no por la glória o vtilidád que dello ſe podra ſeguir a v. m. ultra de que con eſto ſatisfaga en parte la deuda de agradecimiento, que dévo a quien con tanta voluntád favorece a mi profeſsión, oficio verdaderamente próprio de hombres ſábios y diſcrétos, anſi como es de ygnorantes y poco menos que béſtias, el impedír ſemejantes exercicios lo qual no cabe ſino en hombres grueſſos de entendimiento, y de conciéncias, Suplico a. v.m. ſe ſirva de recebir eſſo pequeño ſervício, aunque con grande voluntád ofrecido, y ponér lo debaxo de ſu protectión y ampáro, pues con eſto, la obra quederá ſegura, y yo tambien lo eſtaré, de que eſtá bien empleáda: y tomaré álas para emprendér mayóres coſas en nombre de v.m. Cuya muy ilu-ſtre perſona, nueſtro ſeñor guarde con acrecentamiento de mayóres eſtados.

Béſa las manos de v.m. ſu ſervidór,

IOHN MINSHEU.

Diálogo priméro para levantárſe por la mañana y las coſas a ello pertenecién-tes, *entre un hidálgo llamádo don Pedro y ſu* criádo Alonſo, y un ſu amigo llamádo don Iuan, *y úna áma.*

D.P. OYes moço?
A. Señór.
d.P. Que óra es?
A. Las cinco ſon dádas.
d.P. Levántate y abre aquélla ventána a vér ſi es de dia.
A. Aun no es bien amenecído.
d.P. Pues aſno, como dixiſte que ha dado las çinco?
A. Señór las çinco yo las conté, peró el relóx y la mañána no ándan a úna.
d.P. O tu miéntes o el relóx miénte, que el ſol no puede mentír.
A. Mas vale que miénto yo, que no el año.
d.P. Que día haze?
A. Señór nubládo.
d.P. En los ójos déves tu de tenér las núbes que el cielo yo le véo cláro.
A. Pues no eſtóy çiégo.
d.P. Antes créo que eſtas durmiéndo toda vía.
A. Sé, que no ſoy elefante que tengo de dormírme en pie.
d.P. Haze frío?
A. Vn cerceganíllo éntra por la ventána que córta las narízes.
d.P. Dáme de veſtír que me quiéro levantár.
A. A que, tan de mañana?
d.P. A negociár, que téngo mucho que hazér oy.
A. Aun no eſtará nádie en pie.
d.P. Tu adevínas a tu provécho.
A. Que veſtído ſe quiere ponér vueſtra mercéd?
d.P. El de velárte, que dízen que es hónra y provécho.
A. Que jubón?
d.P. El de ráſo peſpuntádo.
A. He le aquí.
d.P. ✠ Majadéro, pues el jubon me tráes,

The firſt Dialogue of riſing in the morning, and of thoſe things thereunto *appertaining: betweene a Gentleman named* M. *Peter*, and his ſeruant *Alonſo*, & another friend *of his called M.* Iohn, *and a nurſe of the houſe.*

P. YOuth, doeſt thou heare?
A. Sir.
P. What is it of the clocke?
A. It hath ſtrooken fiue.
P. Riſe, and open that window, to ſee if it be day.
A. It is not yet breake of the day.
P. Why then aſſehead, why ſaidſt thou that it had ſtrooke fiue a clocke.
A. Sir, I told you fiue, but the clocke and the morning goe not together.
P. Either thou lieſt, or the clocke lieth, for the ſunne cannot lie.
A. It is better that I lie, then the yeere proone out ill.
P. What weather is it?
A. Sir cloudie weather.
P. Belike thine eies be cloudie, for I ſee the skie cleere.
A. Yet am I not blinde.
P. Rather I beleeue thou ſtandeſt ſleeping.
A. I knowe, I am not elephant to ſleepe ſtanding.
P. Is it cold weather?
A. Here comes in ſuch a colde northerly winde at the windowe, that it bites off my noſe.
P. Giue me my clothes, for I will riſe.
A. What to doe ſo early?
P. To goe about buſines, for I haue much to doe to day.
A. No bodie will be yet ſtirring.
P. Thou doeſt propheſie for thine owne behoofe.
A. What apparell will you weare to day Sir?
P. That of the fine blacke cloth, for it is of eſtimation and profitable.
A. What doublet?
P. That of ſtitched ſatten.
A. Here it is.
P. Blocke head, doeſt thou bring me my

es, ántes que la camíſa, quiéres me motejar de açotádo.

*doublet before my ſhirt, wilt thou ſcoffe me as though I had beene * whipped?*

* *Thoſe that be whipped, put on their doblets in haſte before their ſhirts, to ſaue them from another laſh.*

A. Aun no ha tray'do las camíças la labandéra.

A. The laundreſſe hath not yet brought home the ſhirts.

d.P. Pues, hide púta y'd por éllas.

P. Whoorſonne knaue, go then for them.

A. ✻ Al Ruyn de Róma, quando le nómbran, luégo aſóma, aquí viéne ya la labandéra.

A. Lupus eſt in fabula, as ſoone as one names him preſently he appeares, here comes the laundreſſe.

d.P. Eſtá enxúta?

P. Is it drie?

A. Como vn cuerno.

A. As drie as a horne.

d.P. No os he dicho, que no me traygays éſſas comparaciónes.

P. Haue I not told thee, that thou bring me no ſuch compariſons.

A. ✻ Eſſo fuéra, Si fuéra, v.m. perſóna Soſpechóſa que no ſe a de mentár la ſóga, en caſa del ahorcádo.

A. That is true, if you were a perſon ſuſpected, for a man ought not to make mention of a halter in the houſe of a man that was hanged.

d.P. Dáme las cálças de terciopélo acuchilládas.

P. Giue me my paned velues hoſe.

A. Aquí eſtán ſeñór.

A. Here they are ſir.

d.P. Eſtán limpias? mira bien ſi tiénen algun púnto ſuelto las médias.

P. Be they made cleane? Looke well if the ſtockings haue any ſtitches broken in them.

A. Eſſa es vna de las tres coſas que Ganáſa dezía, que el hombre buſca con gran cuydádo, y quando las ha halládo le péſa.

A. This is one of the three things which Ganaſa ſaide a man ſeekes diligently after, and when he hath found them it grienes him.

d.P. Y quales ſon las de mas?

P. And what are the other two?

A. Vna ſuziedád en la cáma, y los cuérnos, ſi ſu mugér ſe los póne, peró éſtas ſánas eſtán.

A, Filth in the bed one lieth in, and hornes if they be of his owne wiues grafting, but theſe ſtockings are whole.

d.P. Cálçamelas, dáme el ſáyo de velárte, quel de ráxa es muy delgádo para éſte frío que háze.

P. Pull them on, giue me that ierkin of blacke cloth, for that of thin cloth raſh is very thin for this cold weather.

A. Quiére, v.m. ponérſe borzeguíes?

A. Will you weare buskins?

d.P. No ſino çapátos y pantúflos, por amór del lódo: Dáme primero aguamános.

P. No, but pumpes and pantofles becauſe of the durt: Giue me firſt water to waſh my hands.

A. Señor el água eſtá eláda en el járro.

A. Sir, the water is frozen in the pot.

d.P. Buéna ſeñál. A. De que ſeñór? d.P. de Caránbanos.

P. A good ſigne. A. Of what ſir? P. Of ice.

A. Y aun de que háze frío.

A. And alſo that it is cold.

d.P. Derrítelo en el braſéro, dáme entre tánto el eſpéjo y v'nas tixéras que quiéro adereçárme la bárva.

P. Thaw it in the pan of coales, in the meane while giue me the looking glaſſe and ſciſſers, for I will trim my beard.

A. Aquí eſtá el eſtúche donde eſtá todo, y tambien el péyne.

A. Here is the caſe where all are in it, and likewiſe the combe.

d.P. O que de canas téngo, ya me voy parándo

P. O what hoare haires I haue, I begin to waxe

parándo véjo.

A. Señór, las navidádes no ſe van en bálde.

d.P. Por cierto no téngo muchas, ſino ✻ como dízen en mi tierra, cánas y cuérnos no viénen por días.

A. Ya eſtá buena éſta água, bien ſe puede vueſtra mercéd lavár.

d.P. Pues daca la fuénte, y la toalla.

A. Quiére, v.m. Llevér capa y górra o herreruélo y ſombréro?

d.P. No es aóra tiémpo de górra, dame el ferreruélo lárgo, y vn ſombréro de fieltro.

A. Que eſpáda? Dorada, plateáda o Pavonáda?

d.P. No la quiéro, ſino enbarnizáda por ſi lloviére, Mira quien llama a ſa puérta.

A. El ſeñór don Iuan es.

d.P. Córre abre préſto.

d.I. Muy buenos dias dé Dios. a v.m. Señór don Pedro.

d.P. O ſeñór don Iuan. v.m. ſea tan bien ✻ venído como los buenos años: como eſtá v.m?

d.I. Muy al ſervício de v. m. v.m. eſtá bueno?

d.P. Al ſervício de v. m. como eſtuviére, aunque algo achacóſo.

d.I. Pues porque madrúga tanto ſino ánda bueno?

d.P. Porque dízen los médicos que para la ſalúd, es bueno levantár de mañána.

d.I. Eſſa ſalúd ténganſe la éllos, que para mi éſtos ſon los dias que devémos metér en caſa cómo díze el Refrán, o que los tengámos en la cama, dixéra mejór.

d.P. Para dezír la verdád, yo mas lo hágo, por entendér en mis negócios.

d.I. Como le va a v.m. dellos?

d.P. Señor al ſerv ício de v. m. mal bendíto ſea Dios.

d.I. Como anſi no deſpáchan a v.m?

d.P. Si Señór deſpéchan me. Mucácho tráe nos de almorzár antes que ſalgámos.

d.I. Ya

waxe olde.

A. Sir, yeeres paſſe not ouer ones head in vaine.

P. Truely, I haue not many yeeres on my backe, but as they ſay in my countrie, Houre haires, & hornes come not by age.

A. This water is now well, you may now wel waſh Sir.

P. Then giue heere the baſen and yewer, and the towell.

A. Will you weare a ſhort cloake and cap, or long cloake and hat?

P. It is no weather now for a cap, giue me a long cloake and a felt hat.

A. What rapier, gilt, ſilvered, or ſanguined?

P. None, but that varniſt rapier, leaſt it ſhould raine: Go looke who knockes at the doore.

A. It is maſter Iohn.

P. Run, open the doore quickly.

I. God giue you good morowe maſter Peter.

P. Oh maſter Iohn, you are as well welcome as good fortune: how do you Sir?

I. Readie to do you ſeruice, and are you well Sir?

P. Howſoeuer Sir, at your command although now I am not halfe well.

I. Why then do you riſe ſo earely, if you be not well?

P. Becauſe Phiſitions ſaie, that for ones health it is good to riſe earelie in the morning.

I. That health let them haue themſelues for me, theſe be the good daies (as the Prouerbe ſaith) which wee ought to locke vp within our dores, nay (I ſhould ſay) within our beds.

P. To tell you the truth, I do it chiefely to follow my buſines.

I. How goeth it with you in your buſines?

P. Sir at your command, but ill inough God be thanked.

I. How, do they not diſpatch you?

P. Yea Sir, they deſpite me. Boie, giue vs ſomewhat to breakefaſt before we go foorth.

d.I. Ya yo he bevido vna véz.
I. I haue alreadie eaten a bit.

d.P. Beverá. v. m. ótra que no le hará mal.
P. One bit more will doe you no harme.

d.I. ✻ No, que no ſoy tan delicádo como judío en viernes.
I. No, for I am not ſo curious as the Iewe on a friday.

A. Que quieren vs. ms. almorzár.
A. What will your worſhips breake your faſt withall?

d.P. Tráe vnos paſtéles y vn quartillo de cabrito aſſádo.
P. Bring a pie, and a quarter of a roſted kidde.

d.I. Que bien adereçádo tiene. v. m. éſte apoſénto ſeñór don P?
I. Oh how well in order haue you this lodging M. Peter?

d.P. Señór Razonáble como para vn hidálgo póbre.
P. Sir reaſonable for a poore gentleman.

d.I. De donde úvo. v. m. ésta tapicería?
I. From whence had you this tapeſtrie hangings?

d.P. Señór, de Flandes víno.
P. Sir it came from Flaunders.

d.I. Tambien déven deſer de alla los liénços o pintúras o Retrátos?
I. And from thence alſo came theſe pictures and portraitures?

d.P. Algúnos déllos, otros ſon de Ytália.
P. Some of them did, others came from Italie.

d.I. De gentíl máno ſon por cierto: quanto le coſtó. a v. m. éſte eſcritório?
I. Truely they are of a fine workmans doing. What coſt this deske or caske?

d.P. Mas que vale, quarenta ducádos.
P. More then it is worth, fortie ducates.

d.I. De que madéra es?
I. Of what wood is it?

d.P. La colorada es caóba de la Havána y ésta négra es évano, la bláneca es marfil.
*P. The red is * Caóba of Havána, and this blacke is Ebonie, and the white is Iuorie.*

* *Caóba, a fine red wood in the Indies, of which they make checker worke and other curious works in cupboords, &c.*

d.I. Cierto que eſtá muy curióſo, y muy bien aſentáda la taraçéa.
I. Truely it is very curious, and the inlaying of the wood moſt finely ſet in.

d.P. Aquí verá. v. m. vn bufete mejór labrádo.
P. Here may you ſee a ſtanding table, better wrought.

d.I. Adonde fue hécho?
I. Where was it made?

d.P. El y las ſíllas viniéron de Salamánca.
P. That and the chaires came from Salamanca.

d.I. Lo mejór le falta a. v. m. en eſte apoſento.
I. The beſt thing is yet wanting in this lodging.

d.P. Que es, por vída del Señór don Iuan?
P. What is it I praie you hartelie maſter Iohn?

d.I. Por lo que dezía don juan manuel, un ſonezíto de chapín.
I. That which don Iohn Manuel ſaide, the gentle ſound of a womans ſhoe.

d.P. Ya entiendo, por la muger lo díze v.m.
P. Now I vnderſtande you meane a wife?

d.I. Por la miſma.
I. Euen the ſelfe ſame.

d.P. Ami me pareçe que lo mejór que tiene es eſtár ſin ella.
P. It ſeemes vnto me, that the beſt thing my lodging hath is to be without hir.

d.I. ✻ O Señór no diga. v. m. eſſo que es triſte coſa la ſoledád.
I. Oh Sir, ſaie not ſo, ſolitarines is vnpleaſant.

d.P. ✻ A tengo me al que díze, que Vale mas ſolo que mal acompañádo.
P. Ah Sir, I ſtande to that old ſaying, better alone then euill accompanied.

d.I. Pues

I. But

d.I. Pues no ſe entiende que a de ſer mala.

I. But you muſt not vnderſtande of a bad wife.

d.P. Y adónde le hallarémos que ſea buena?

P. And where ſhall we finde hir that is good?

d.I. Muchas ay muy buenas.

I. There are many very good.

d.P. Es verdad, las que eſtán enterrádas.

P. It is true, they which are dead and buried.

d.I. De ſuerte que quiere.v.m. dezír que la mujér eſtonçes es buena quando eſtá muerta.

I. So that you will ſay, that a woman is then good, when ſhe is dead.

d.P. Digo ſeñór que cada loco con ſu tema, yo he dado a ora en eſta.

P. I ſay Sir, that euery foole hath his wilfulneſſe, and I haue lighted now vpon this.

d.I. ⁂ Y ſe ſaldrá. v.m. con ella, como el Rey con ſus alcaválas.

*I. And you ſhall as eaſily carrie it away as the * king doth his ſubſidies.*

* *Without controulment.*

d.P. ⁂ Se díze que úna buena múla, y vna buena cabra, y vna buena mugér ſon tres, malas cúcas.

P. It is ſaid, that a good mule, a good goat, and a good woman are three vnhappie creatures.

Al. La meſa eſtá pueſta bien ſe pueden ſentar.vs.ms.a almorzar.

A. The table is couered, your worſhips may well ſit downe to breakefaſt.

d.P. Señór don Iuan tome.vs.ms.aquella cabeçera.

P. M. Iohn, ſit you downe at the vpper end of the table.

d.I. Bueno ſería, eſſo es per motejarme de viejo.

I. It ſhould doe well in deede, that is a floute becauſe I am olde.

d.P. No, ſi no por cumplír con la razón

P. Not ſo, but to doe you right.

d.I. V.m.tome ſu lugár que yo tomaré el mio.

I. Take you your place and I will take mine.

d.P. Bueno es que venga a mi caſa, quien mande en ella mas que yo.

P. It is very good, that I ſhould haue ſuch a gueſt as ſhould command more in my houſe then my ſelfe.

d.I. O ſi por ay lo echa.v.m. yo obedeſco en ſu caſa y fuera.

I. Oh Sir if you take it ſo, I not onely obey you in your houſe, but abroad alſo.

d.P. Yo ſoy el que tengo de ſervír como la razón me oblíga. Muchacho dacá platos.

P. Sir I am to be at your ſeruice, as reaſon bindeth mee. Boie giue mee diſhes heere.

Al. Aqui eſtan Señór.

A. Heere they are Sir.

d.P. De adonde truxiſte eſtos paſteles?

P. From whence didſt thou fetch theſe pies?

Al. De la mas límpia paſtelera que ay en la ciudad.

A. From the cleanlieſt piewife, that is in the citie.

d.P. Son de nueſtra vezína la hermoſa?

P. What from our faire neighbour?

Al. Si Señór.

A. Yea Sir.

d.P. Bien los puede.v.m. comér ſin aſco que ne mujer límpia ſon.

P. Well may you eate Sir of them without loathing, for they are from a clenly woman.

d.I. Mas que nunca lo fueran, nunca yo míro en miſérias.

I. And if they were not, I neuer ſticke for ſmall matters.

d.P. Pues menos mirára, ſi fuera tan amigo de ellos como yo.

P. Leſſe woulde you ſtande vpon it, if you did loue them as I doe.

d.I. Muy bien me ſaben, y lo mejór que yo les hallo es ſer comida tan

I. They pleaſe my taſte well, and the beſt is that I alwaies finde them to bee a meate

tan acorrída, que a qual quier, ora, que el hombre la quiera la halla guisada.

meate so in readines, that at whatsoeuer hower a man will haue it he may finde it ready dreſt.

d.P. Muchácho da nos de bevér que pica la pimiénta.

P. Boy giue vs drinke, for the pepper bites.

Al. Que quiere, v.m. blanco o tinto?

*A. Which will you haue ſir, ſacke or * tinto?*

* *Tinto is a wine in Spaine red & blackiſh.*

d.P. Echa de lo blanco, que es mas caliente para por la mañána.

P. Fill out of the ſacke, for it is more heating, chiefly for the morning.

d.I. Y aun es mas ſaludáble que lo tinto.

I. And alſo is more wholeſome then the red.

d.P. Brindo a v.m. Señór don Iuán.

P. I drinke to you maſter Iohn.

d.I. Beſo, a, v.m. las manos, haré la razón.

I. I thanke you ſir, I will pledge you.

Al. Por qual táça quiere, v.m. bevér, por la Llana o por ésta hondilla.

A. In which cup will your worſhip drinke, in the plaine bowle, or in the little deepe one.

d.I. Alonſo amigo, avéis de ſabér que yo ſoy muy buen borrácho y ſe muy bien lo que me bévo, por ésſo echaldme por aquella taça llana.

I. Friend Alonſo you muſt knowe, that I am a very good drinker, and know how much I vſe to drinke, wherefore fill me that plaine bowle.

d.P. Yo gusto mas de bevér por ésta copa de vídrio que no por ninguna de las taças.

P. I like better to drinke out of this drinking glaſſe then out of any other of the cups.

d.I. ✻ Señór, contra gustos no ay dispúta.

I. Sir, againſt ones liking there is no diſputing.

d.P. Anſi es verdád, con ésta pierna de cabríto beverá, v.m. otra véz, y trae vnas aceitúnas para la terçera.

P. It is ſo Sir: this leg of kid will make you once againe haue a quarrell to the cup. Bring vs ſome oliues for the third courſe.

d.I. Essa ya ſe llamará comída y no almuérzo.

I. This is to be called a dinner and not a breakefaſt.

d.P. Porque?

P. Why?

d.I. Porque dízen a buen coméro mal comér, tres vézes ſe a de bevér.

I. Becauſe to a good meale or a bad, three draughts onely are to be had.

d.P. Ay dize nueſtra madre çeleſtína ✻ que ésta corrúpta la letra qne por dezír tréze dixo tres.

P. Alas faith our mother Celeſtine, the letter is corrupted, for whereas he ſhould haue ſaid thirteene, he ſet downe three.

d.I. Aora señór bien ésta lo hecho, no mas que perderémos la gana de el comer.

I. Well Sir, it ſufficeth, we haue eaten well, no more, for we ſhall looſe our ſtomacks to eate at dinner.

d.P. den nos a bevér otras ſendas de la calabriáda.

*P. Let them giue to each of vs once againe of the * Calabriáda.*

* Calabriáda: *a mixed wine, halfe one wine and halfe another.*

d.I. Adonde yrémos?

I. Whither ſhall we goe?

d.P, Lo primero a la yglésia, y encomendár nos a Dios.

P. Firſt to the Church, to commend our ſelues to God.

d.I. ✻ Está muy bien, que por yr a la yglésia ni dar çevada, no ſe pierde jornada.

I. It is very good, for neither in going to the Church, nor in giuing prouender to thy horſe, was there euer iourney hindered or loſt.

d.P. çierra

P. Shut

d.P. çierra aquel cofre, pon en cobro eſſas baratíjas, llama al áma que barra y componga eſte apoſento.

Al. Tengo de yr acompañando a v.m?

d.P. No, ſino quédate en caſa, ayúda al áma y limpia todos mis veſtídos y ponedla en órden y a las onze llevame el cavallo a palácio.

Al. Eſtá muy bien Señór, yo lo haré anſi.

d.P. ✻ eſte mi criádo Señór don juan, es como malílla que hago de ello que quiero.

d.I. Y aun anda. v. m. en lo çierto para ſer bien ſervido, que quando hombre tiene muchos criádos, unos por otros nunca házen cóſa a derechas.

d.P. El me ſirve de mayordómo, de repoſtéro, de maeſtre ſala, de guarda ropa, de paje, y de lacáyo, y a vezes de deſpenſéro.

d.I. El parece buen hijo.

d.P. Bueno ſeñor es tan bueno que a ſer mas, no valiéra nada, ſola vna falta tiene.

d.I. Qual es?

d.P. ✻ Que es grandíſſimo enemígo de el água.

d.I. Eſſo hará lo, por el bien que le ſabe el vino, peró eſſa no ſe puede llamár falta, ſi no ſóbra.

d.P. Muchácho cierra la puérta, con la ✻ llave, que a puérta çerráda el Diablo ſe buelue.

Al. Ama, tráyga vn caldéro de água y vna eſcoba, regarémos y barrarémos eſte apoſénto.

Ama. Toma primero eſta ropa blanca que tráxo la labandéra.

Al. Aguarde, ſacaré la memória para vér ſi falta algo.

Am. Adonde la tienes?

Al. Aquí eſtá en mi faltriquéra.

Am. Lee la pues.

Al. Memória de la ropa de mi ámo que llevó la lavandéra en diez de março de 1599. primeraménte quatro camiſas con ſus cuellos

P. Shut that cheſt, put vp ſafe this houſehold ſtuffe, call the nurſe that ſhee ſweepe and dreſſe this lodging.

A. Shall I waite on your ſir?

P. No, but tarie in the houſe, helpe the nurſe and bruſh all my apparel and ſet the houſe in order, and at elenen of the clocke bring my horſe to the court.

A. Verie well ſir, I will doe it.

*P. This my ſeruant maſter Iohn is as the * Malilla, for I make of him what I will.*

I. And thereby you are ſure to be well ſerued, for when a man hath many ſeruants, one by reaſon of the other neuer doe that they ought.

P. He ſerueth me for ſteward of my houſe, for a keeper of my plate, for a gen-man-uſher, wardrop keeper, page, and for lacquey, and ſometimes for cater.

I. He ſeemes to be an honeſt fellow, a good fellow or good ſeruant.

P. Good Sir, ſo good he is, that if he were better, he were worth nothing, only one fault he hath.

I. What is that?

P. That he loues no water by no meanes.

I. That is for the good he findes in wine, but this cannot be called a want in him, but a ſuperfluitie.

P. Boy, locke the doore with the key, for at a locked doore, the diuell himſelfe goeth his way.

A. Nurſe, bring a kettle of water and a broome, we will caſt water on, and ſweepe this chamber.

N. Take firſt this cleane linnen which the laundreſſe brought home.

A. Stay a little, I will take out the note to ſee if any thing be wanting.

N. Where is it?

A. Heere it is in my pocket.

N. Reade it then.

A. A note of my maſters clothes which the laundreſſe had the tenth of March, 1599. Firſt fower ſhirts, with their ruffe bands

* Malilla a card agreed vpon, that he that hath him may make of him, king, queene, knaue, ace, nine, ten, or whatſoeuer other carde.

cuellos de lechuguilla.

Am. Aqui eſtán A. dos ſábanas, dos almohádas de cama, dos pares de calçónes de lienco, tres de calçétas.

A. Aqui eſtán.

Al. Vna dozena de pares de eſcarpínes.

Am. No ay aquí mas que ocho.

Al. Pues quatro faltan a la labandéra pedírle he que de quenta dellos, y ſi ella los perdió que los págue.

Am. Anda, que válen quatro eſcarpínes viejos y rótos?

Al. Yten mas dos eſcofiétas y quatro tocadóres, media dozena de pañizuelos de narizes.

Am. Aqui eſtá todo.

Al. Dos meſas de mantéles, y diez ſervilléras.

Am. Aqui eſtán.

Al. Tres toallas, y vn frutéro, y dos cuellos de encáje con ſus puños.

Am. Todo eſtá aqui que nada falta.

Al. Pues doblémos lo, y pongámos lo en el árca.

Am. Como me Llamáys para que os ayúde a éſto, no me Llamárades para que os ayudára al almuérzo.

Al. Alli tengo guardados vnos eſcamochos que ſobraran a mi ámo.

Am. Quiero primero barrér éſta ſala y adereçárla.

Al. Entre tanto limpiaré yo la ropa, ſave de la eſcobilla?

Am. Veſla alli colgada de aquel clávo, que ſi fuéra pérro ya te uviéra mordido.

Al. O quanto polvo tiene eſta capa?

Am. Sacudé la primero con vna vára.

Al. Ama, mas que bien hechos eſtán eſtos calçónes?

Am. Tanbien entiendo yo de éſſo, como puerca de freno.

Al. Pues que entiende?

Am. Al lo que a mi me importa ſi tu pregun-

to them.

N. Heere they are. Al. a paire of ſheetes, two pillowes, two paire of linnen breeches next the skin, three paire of linnen hoſe vnder the ſtockings:

N. Heere they are.

A. A doſen paire of ſockes.

N. There are but eight heere.

A. Then fower wants, I will require of the laundreſſe that ſhe giue account of them, and if ſhe hath loſt them that ſhe paie for them.

N. Go, what are fower old broken ſockes woorth?

A. Alſo more, two night coifes and fower night kerchiefes, halfe a dooſen of handkerchiefes.

N. Here is all.

A. Two table clothes and ten table napkins.

N. Here they are.

*A. Three towels, and one * fruite cloth and two ruffe bandes wrought with their ruffes at hand.*

N. All is here, nothing is wanting.

A. Then let vs fold it, and let vs put it in the cheſt.

N. Wherefore call you me, that I ſhould helpe you to do this, & would not cal me that I ſhould helpe you to eate your breakefaſt?

A. There haue I ſaued certaine fragments which my Maſter left.

N. I will firſt ſweepe this hall and dreſſe it.

A. In the meane while will I bruſh the clothes: doe you knowe where the bruſh is?

N. See there hanged vpon that naile, that if it were a beare it would now haue bit thee.

A. Oh what a deale of duſt hath this cloke?

N. Beate it out firſt with a wand.

A. Nurſe, how exceeding well are theſe breeches made.

N. I haue as good knowledge therein as a ſowe in a bridle.

A. What haue you knowledge in then?

N. In that which belongeth vnto me, if thou

* Fruit cloth to couer the fruite when it is carried to the table.

preguntáras por una baſquiña, una ſáya entera, una ropa, un manto, o un cuerpo, una gorguéra, de una toca, y coſas ſemejantes, ſupiéra te yo reſpondér.

thou hadſt asked of a peticoate, a womans caſſocke, a womans gowne a mantell, a paire of bodies, a gorget, or a womans head attire, and like matters, I could haue anſwered thee.

Al. De manera que no ſabe léer, mas de por el libro de ſu aldéa.

A. So then the prieſt cannot ſay maſſe but in his owne booke.

Am. Quieres tu, que ſea yo, como el ymbidioſo, que ſu cuidado es en lo que no le va ni le viéne.

N. Wilt thou, that I ſhould be as the enuious perſon which ſetteth his minde on that which belongs not vnto him.

Al. Siempre es virtúd ſavér, aunque ſean coſas que pareçe que no nos ymportan.

A. Yet alwaies it is a vertue to know, although they be things which ſeem not to appertaine vnto vs.

Am. Bien ſé yo, que tu ſabrás hazér una bellaqueria, y éſta no es virtúd.

N. I know well, that thou knoweſt well how to play the knaue, and that I am ſure is no vertue.

Al. El ſavérla hazér no es malo, el uſárla ſi.

A. To know how to doe it is not euill, but to vſe it it is euill.

Am. ✻ Siempre oy dezír que quien las ſabe las táñe.

N. I alwaies haue heard ſay, he that can play, plaieth.

Al. ✻ No ſino que quien ha las hechas ha las ſoſpéchas.

A. No but whoſoeuer is bad, hath ſuſpition of another to be bad.

Am. Pues velláco que he hecho yo?

N. Why knaue what haue I done?

Al. No mas de hazérme regañái algunas vézes.

A. Nothing elſe, but make me fret and vexe my ſelfe ſometimes.

Ama. No me des tu ocaſión.

N. Doe not thou giue me occaſion?

Al. Eſtonces muchas merçédes, quando le doy ocaſion, es meneſtér que me perdóne, que quando no ſe la doy, poca amiſtád me haze.

*A. Then I thanke you hartily, when I giue you occaſion it is neceſſarie that you pardon me, that when I giue you no occaſion, you doe mee little * curteſie.*

* *Meaning then ſhe doth not forgiue him any thing, ſeeing he maketh no offence vnto her.*

Ama. Aora hermáno dexate de retóricas y has lo que tu ámo te mandó.

N. Now brother, leaue your rhetoricke, and doe that thy M. commanded thee.

Al. Si haré aun que bien créo que no por éſſo me tengo de aſentár con el ala meſa.

A. So will I doe, although I beleeue, for all that I am not to ſit at table with him.

Ama. A lomenos eſcuſarás de que el no te aſiénte en el rábo.

N. Thou muſt needes beare with that, for that he doth not ſet it on your bum.

Al. Yo voy a enſillár el cavállo, a dios paredes haſta la buelta.

A. I goe to ſaddle the horſe, farewell wals till my returne.

Diálogo ſegúndo, en el qual, ſe tráta *de comprár y vendér jóyas y otras coſas* entre un Hidálgo llamado Thomas, y ſu *mugér Margaríta, y un Mercadér y un Platéro.*

Th. ADonde queréis que vamos Señóra?

Ma. Vámos a la platería, y comprarémos algunas piéças de plata.

Th. Y de alli?

Ma. Yrémos a la lonja para comprár algunas cóſas.

Th. En el nombre de Dios, entrémos en eſta tiénda.

Ma. Plegue a el, ſea con pie derecho.

Th. A Señor guarde Dios a v.m.

Pl. Y venga con vueſtras merçedes.

Th. Mande nos moſtrár, algunas buénas piéças.

Pl. Que géneros quiere v.m. táças, copas o jarros, fuentes, platos, y eſcudillas, es lo mas neceſsário.

Th. Y tanbien copas de ſalvo, y ſaléros, vinagéras.

Pl. Ola móço, ſaca aqui toda eſſa plata de el arca.

Ma. Veamos aquellos candeléros y deſpaviladéras.

Th. Si eſtos braſerillos de méſa eſtuviéran Sinceládos fuéran mejóres.

Pl. Otros dízen, que la ſinceladúra es allegadéro de miérda, hablando con perdón de vueſtras merçédes.

Ma. No véo aquí agua manil ningúno.

Pl. Aqui eſtá vno ſobre dorádo y ſinçeládo con ſu fuente de la miſma labór.

Th. Yo quiſiéra toda la baxilla de una miſma labór que no diferençiáran vnas pieças de otras.

Pl. Por eſſo dízen, que tantas opinióneſ ay como cabeças: otros dízen que la variedád es la que agráda.

Th. Es verdád, peró la variedád ha de ſer de cóſas entéras, y por que hazér vna capa de remiéndos, no puede agradár a nádie.

Pl. Conçierte

The ſecond Dialogue, wherin is handled *to buie and ſell iewels and other* things, betweene a gentleman called *Thomas and his wife Margaret, and a Merchant, and a goldſmith.*

Th. WHither will you that wee goe Ladie?

Ma. Let vs go to the goldſmithes ſhops, and we will buie ſome peeces of plate.

Th. And from thence whither?

Ma. We will go to the Exchange to buy ſom things.

Th. In the name of God let vs go into this ſhop.

Ma. I praie God it be in good time, luckely.

Th. Oh maſter goldſmith, God ſaue you.

Go. And God be in your companie.

Th. Cauſe one to ſhew vs ſome good peeces.

Go. What kinds will your worſhips ſee, plain cups, deep cups, or pots, ewers, platters, or diſhes, all theſe are the moſt neceſſarie.

Th. And alſo cups with couers, and ſalt-ſellers, and bottles for vineger and oyle.

Go. Ho ſirra, take out heere all this plate out of this cheſt.

Ma. Let vs ſee theſe candleſtickes and ſnuffers.

T. If thoſe chafindiſhes for the table were engrauen they were better.

G. Others ſay, that the graning is a gathering of filth, ſpeaking with reuerence of your worſhips.

M. I ſee no baſen here.

G. Here is one gilt ouer, and graued with his ewer of the ſame worke.

T. I would haue all a cupboord of plate all of one worke, that there might not differ one peece from another.

G. Therefore they ſay, ſo many men ſo many mindes, others ſay varietie breedes delight.

T. It is true, but that varietie is to be of whole entire things by themſelues, for to make a cloake with patches can pleaſe no bodie.

Go. Agree

Pl. Conçierte ſe v.m. conmígo en el préçio, que yo ſe la daré acabáda dentro de pocas días de la hechura que la quiſiére.

Go. Agree with me for the price, and I wil make it vp for you within theſe few daies, of what faſhion you will haue it.

Ma. Siempre en las tardanças ay peligro, y vale mas páxaro en mano que bueytre bolándo.

M. Alwaies delaies breede danger, and better a birde in hand then a vulture flying.

Th. Pues eſcoja de ay v.m. les pieças que mas le agradáren.

T. Then chooſe you out thoſe peeces which beſt ſhall like you.

Ma. Eſte ſalpimentéro y éſta copa con ſu ſobre copa, y éſte pichel, y éſta caldereta, y éſta porcelána ſean las priméras.

M. This ſalt and pepper boxe, and this cup with his couer, and this pot made ewer wiſe, and this kettle of ſilner, and this broad cup to drinke in are the beſt.

Th. A como hémos de dár por * el marco de eſtas pieças?

Th. What are we to paie for the halfe pound of theſe peeces?

* *Marco de plato is worth xxxij. s. Engliſh beſide the faſhion.*

Pl. Por el marco de las llanas me ha de dár. v. m. a çien reáles por las ſinçeláda, a quinze ducádos y por las doradas a treynta ducados.

Go. For the halfe pounde of theſe plaine peeces your worſhip is to giue mee fiftie ſhillings, for the engrauing fifteene ducates, and for the gilt thirtie ducates.

Th. Si el pedír fuera dár, no ſe avía hecho mala haziénda oy, peró de * el dicho a el hécho ay gran trecho.

Th. If asking were giuing you had not made an ill match to day, but there is a great diſtance betwixt the worde and the deede.

Pl Al de menos no lo daré yo por lo, que. v.m. me ha ofreçído haſta agora.

Go. At leaſt I will not giue it for that you haue offered me as yet.

Th. Eſtá tan caro, que yo no ſé que le ofrezca ſi no es vna * báxa.

Th. You are ſo deere that I know not what I may offer for it, if there bee no abatement.

* *A daunce ſo called. Alſo an abatement.*

Pl. Eſſa yo la dançaré deſpues que. v. m. aya tañído ſu álta.

Go. That will I daunce after your worſhip hath ſtrooke the treble.

Th. Mi mas alta Señór, es a ſeis ducados la llána, y a çien reales, la ſinçeláda, y la doráda, a veinte ducádos.

Th. My higheſt is ſixe ducates the plaine, and fiftie ſhillings the engrauen, and the gilt twentie ducates.

Pl. Muy bien deſpachádo yva yo, mas me tiénen ami de cóſta.

Go. This buſines is wel diſpatched now, they coſt me more.

Th. Pues Señór torne a dançár a vér en que pára.

Th. But ſir, come backe and daunce againe, to ſee vpon what you ſticke.

Pl. En cada género, le quitaré a. v.m. dos ducádos y no mas.

Go. In euery kinde of them I will abate two ducates and no more.

Th. Muy mal dançó. v. m. no le tóco mas.

Th. You daunce very ill, I plaie no more.

Pl. Pues yo le aſegúro a. v.m. que no lo halle mas varáto en la calle.

Go. But I aſſure your worſhip that you cannot finde better cheape in the ſtreete.

Th. Calle que ſi hallare, que donde vna * puerta ſe cierra ciento ſe ábren.

Th. Holde your peace, for I will finde: for where one dore ſhuts a hundred do open.

Ma. Si ha de valér mi voto, dezír le he.

Ma. If my voice may preuaile, ile ſtrike the ſtroke.

Pl. Diga

Go. Let

Pl. Diga le v.m.que le ſoy muy devóto.

Go. Let your worſhip ſpeake on, for I am much deuoted.

Ma. Pues otro tanto como baxó el platéro, ſuba el ſeñor Tomas y no ſe hable mas.

Ma. Then ſo much as the goldſmith hath abated, ſo much let maſter Thomas riſe, and let there be no more wordes.

Pl. Porque ſu palabra de v.m. no buelva atrás, &c.

Go. For that your worſhips worde may bee taken, &c.

Th. No quería v.m.mas, ora peſelo, peſár malo le dé dios a el diablo.

Th. You can deſire no more, now waigh it, God giue ill waight to the duell.

Pl. Lleven lo a cáſa que allá lo peſarémos.

Go. Carrie it to your houſe, there we will waigh it.

Th. Móço carga con todo y Lleva lo a caſa.

Th. Sirra, take vp all this and carrie it home.

Pl. Han de bolvér ſe luego vueſtras merçédes?

Go. Are your worſhips to come backe againe this way by and by?

Th. No haſta de aquí a dos oras, que y'mos a comprár otras coſas.

Th. Not till within this two howers, for we goe to buy other things.

Pl. Si v. m. es ſervído de que le acompañe, hazér lo he.

Go. If it pleaſe you, that I go with you, I will.

Ma. Guarde Dios a v.m.que no queremos mas compañía.

Ma. God keepe you, we will no more companie.

Th. En ninguna coſa gaſto el dinero, de mejor gána que en pláta.

Th. In nothing I ſpend money with a better will then in plate.

Ma. Lo que ſe gaſta en plata no es gaſtár, ſi no trocár pieças chicas por pieças grandes.

Ma. That which is laide out in plate is not waſted, but to change ſmall peeces for great peeces.

Th. Y tanbien por que cabe en ella lo que dizen que no cabe en un ſaco que es honra y provecho.

*Th. And alſo there is contayned in it that they ſay is not contained in a ſacke, which is *honor and profit.*

* *Honor and profit is not held together in one bagge.*

Ma. Si, por que ſi hombre le quiere ſervír con vídrio o china, o bárro, mas cueſta lo que ſe quiebra entre año que la hechura de la plata.

*Ma. Yea, for if a man will ſerue his turne with glaſſe, or * China mettall, or earth, that which is broken thereof, coſts more in a yeere then the faſhion of the plate.*

* *i. the fine diſhes of earth painted ſuch as are brought from Venice.*

Th. Y con vna baxilla que hombre cómpra vna vez, tiene para hijos, nietos, y viſnietos.

Th. And for a cuphoord that a man buieth once, he is furniſhed for his children, nephewes, and nephewes children.

Ma. Aora vámos a la joyería.

Ma. Now let vs goe to the place where they ſell iewels.

Th. Eſſe es vn camíno que yo hago de muy mala gana.

Th. This is a way that I goe vnwillingly.

Ma. Por que razón?

Ma. What is the reaſon?

Th. Por que éſtas joyas ſon como las donzellas, que miéntras eſtán encerrádas ſon de mucho valór, y en ſacando las fuéra, le pierden todo y no válen nada.

Th. Becauſe theſe iewels are as maidens, that while they are maides and kept in, they are of much value, and in taking them abroad they looſe all, and are worth nothing.

Ma. Si peró, lo que ſe vſa no ſe eſcúſa.

Ma. Yea, but that which is a cuſtome cannot be ſhunned, cuſtome needes no excuſe.

Th. Al

Th. But

Th. Al mal vſo quebrár le la pierna.

Th. But it is good to breake the legs of an ill custome.

Ma. No queráis ſeñór ponér vos puertas a el campo ni coregír el mundo, que anſi le halláſtes y anſi le haveis de dexár.

*Ma. I would not haue you Sir * make doores for the fields, and correct the whole world: for ſo you found it, and ſo ſhall you leaue it.*

* i. to do things impoſſible.

Th. Ora pues corra ol rio por do ſuele, pues ſe arendo la renta con éſtas condiçiónes.

Th. Why then let the riuer run where it was wont, ſeeing the thing was hired with theſe conditions.

Ma. Entrémos en eſta tiénda que es la mas rica.

Ma. Let vs goe into this ſhop, for it is the richeſt.

Me. Que manda v. m. ſeñór caualléro, que ha meneſtér?

Me. What doth your worſhip command, what haue you neede of?

Th. Yo ninguna coſa, éſta ſeñóra, muchas.

Th. I of nothing, this gentlewoman of many things.

Me. Pues pida ſu merçéd, que tódo ſe le dará aquí a muy buen précio.

Me. Then let her require what, and all ſhall be giuen her very good cheape.

Ma. Mueſtre me acá algunos tocádos, guirnaldíllas, rapóſos, randas, deſhilados, tocas de todas ſuertes, y tan bien venga la olanda delgada, cambray, y otras ſuertes de liéncos.

Ma. Shew me ſome womens head attire, garland head attire, wires of ſiluer, bone worke or bone lace, ſtitched worke, head attire of all ſorts, and alſo bring fine holland, cambrecke, and other ſorts of linnen.

Me. Entre v.m. que todo lo verá aquí.

Me. May it pleaſe your worſhip come in, for you ſhall ſee all heere.

Ma. Todo eſto es obra toſca mas *prima la quiéro.

Ma. All this is groſſe worke, I woulde ſee more principall.

* Prima *i*, chief, principall or a ſheecoſen germain.

Th. Para prima Señora no es buena la hija de vueſtro tío?

Th. Will not your vncles daughter ſerue you for a coſen?

Ma. Es muy gorda aquella, y por eſſo queria otra mas delgáda.

Ma. This is very courſe, and therfore would I haue other finer.

Me. Pues en eſta caxa verá. v.m. el primór del mundo, todo es obra de Milán.

Me. Then in this cheſt ſhal your worſhip ſee the principalleſt that is, all is worke of Milan.

Th. Obra de Milán veeme y no me tangas.

*Th. Worke of Milan * ſee me but touch me not.*

* Bicauſe they are toies, if you touch them they breake in peeces.

Ma. Nada de eſto me conténta.

Ma. None of theſe pleaſeth me.

Me. Eſpanto me como ſe caſó v.m. ſiendo tan mal contentadíza.

Me. I woonder how your worſhip married being ſo diuers to pleaſe your fancy.

Th. Fue por que vído a el nóbio de noche, y como dizen entonçes todos los gatos ſon párdos.

Th. It was bicauſe ſhe ſaw the bridegroome by night, and as they ſaie, then all cats are grey eied.

Ma. Mueſtre me otra mejór obra ſi tiene, y dexeſe de preguntár quantos años tengo.

Ma. Shewe me ſome better worke, if you haue any, and leaue of to aske how old I am.

Me. Aora éſta es la última prueva, ve aquí v.m. óbra de argenteria ve allí de aljófar, eſtótra de abalório, y éſta de pérlas, eſcoja como peras en tabáque.

Me. Now is the laſt triall, ſee heere worke of ſiluer, there of ſmall pearle, this other of blacke bugles, and this of pearle, chooſe out as peares in a baiket.

Ma. Por cierto en ruin háto, poco ay que eſcojér.

Ma. Verily in a bad flocke, this is but a ſmal choiſe.

Me. A eſto llama v. m. ruín, reo que es de peór condición que el philoſopho Demócrito, que no hallo coſa en el mundo que no tubieſſe fálta.

Me. Call you this bad, I beleeue that you are of a woorſe condition then the Philoſopher Democritus, which found nothing in the world, which had not a fault.

Th. Eſſo ſin Demócrito lo dígo yo, que no ay coſa perfecta en el mundo.

Th. I ſay this without Democritus, that there is nothing perfect in the world.

Me. Eſſo verificárſe ha, en coſas naturales, que en las de el arte puede aver perfecçión cada vna en ſu género.

Me. This is to be verified in natural things, for in thoſe things of arte, there may be perfection, euery thing in his kinde.

Th. Pues que penſais vos que es el arte, ſino ymitadór de la natura, y ſi en la natura no ay perfeçión menos la avrá en el arte ſu imitadór.

Th. Why what thinke you that arte is anie thing elſe but a follower of nature, and if nature hath not her perfection, much leſſe ſhall there be anie in arte hir follower.

Me. Yo ſeñor no ſoy philóſopho, ni quiero contendér con v. m. mis mercaderías querría que tubieſſen ſu perfeçión en el preçio.

Me. Sir I am not a Philoſopher, neither will I contende with your worſhip, I would my merchandizes had their perfection in the price.

Ma. Si no le tienen en ſu valór, no le pueden tenér en el preçio.

Ma. If they haue it not in their woorth, they cannot haue it in their price.

Me. Aora ſeñora véa v. m. lo que mas le conténta, y tome lo que no tengo otra coſa mejór.

Me. Nowe ladie, ſee that which beſt likes you, and take it, for I haue no better.

Ma. Eſte tocádo, eſte cuello, ésta gargantílla de perlas, eſte regalillo, y eſte avanillo, eſta dos pares deguentes de flores, y eſta pretína, me paréçen bien, todo lo de mas no.

*Ma. This kerchiefe, this bande, this necklace of pearle, this muffe, and * this fanne, theſe two paire of gloues perfumed, and this girdle likes me, all the reſt I care not for.*

* *But not of feathers, for they vſe no feather fans in Spaine.*

Th. Quanto monta todo eſſo?

Th. How much comes all this to?

Me. Todo monta tres çientos reáles.

*Me. All comes to * three hundred rials, or ſixe pences.*

* *i. Seauen pound ten ſhillings.*

Th. Tres çientos áños eſté de vn lado quien tal diére.

Th. Let him lie three hundred yeeres on one ſide that ſhould giue ſo much.

Me. Pues por que no le alcançe a v. m. eſſa maldición dos çientos, y ochénta.

Me. Then becauſe this curſe may not light vpon you, giue two hundred and fower ſcore.

Th. No entiendo bien eſſa cuenta.

Th. I vnderſtand not well this reckoning.

Me. * Dos vézes ciento y quarenta.

Me. Twiſe a hundred, and twiſe fortie.

* Dos vezes, ſe refiére a ciento y tambien al quarenta.

Ma. Buena eſtá la copla, no han de ſer mas que dos çientos y cinquenta en todo.

Ma. This copla is well, it ſhould be no more then two hundred and fiftie in all.

Me. Con v. m. el perdér es ganár, pues manda que ſe a anſi, yo no hablaré mas palábra.

Me. With your worſhip to loſe is gaine, ſeeing you commaund ſo, I will not ſpeake a word more.

Th. Para que quiere hablár mas, ſi con las habládas ha hecho ſu agóſto.

Th. Why would you ſpeake any more, if with that which is ſpoken you haue made your harueſt.

Me. Por çierto ſeñór de eſte agóſto, poca

Me. Truely ſir, of this harueſt I haue gotten

ca coſecha he cogído.

Th. Señor ſi hiziéra buena ſementéra cogiera mas.

Me. Aun tengo aquí otras muchas mercaderías muy curioſas que v.m. no ha viſto.

Ma. Que ſon?

Me. Sartíllas, joyeles, cintas de reſplandór, brocadétes, rodétes cofias de oro, arandélas, alcacuéllos, gorgueras de réd, camíſas labradas, gargantillas de pérlas, y ámbar, todo género de afeite y de perfúmes, véa v.m. ſi le contenta algo.

Ma. Otro dia vernémos mas de eſpácio para ver todo eſſo.

Th. Pareçeme ſeñór que es vueſtro oficio, como el de los torneros engaña muchachos y ſaca dineros.

Me. Pues es mi ſeñóra Margaríta muchácho?

Th. Baſta que ſea engañáda.

Me. A fee que no ha de ſavér poco quien la ha de engñár.

Th. Engañárſe ha ella meſma a ſi miſma.

Me. Como?

Sh. Dando dinéros por eſtas bugerías que relúzen yno es óro todo, y quando váya a caſa, ſe hallará con no nada entre dos plátos.

Me. Para que es el dinero ſi no para luzírſe con ello.

Th. Se que eſto aunque relúze no lúze.

Ma. Ya os he dicho ſeñór, que os vais al coriénte de la de mas génte, y pues os caſaſtes como los ótros paſſa por donde los ótros, no andeis por los eſtrémos que todo hombre eſtremádo no eſtá vn dedo de loco, éſtas ſon cargas de el caſamiénto.

Th. La ayuda de el eſcaravájo que dexa la carga quanto le ayúdan.

Ma. Aora

ten but a little fruit.

Th. If you had made your ſeede time better, you had reaped more.

Me. Yet haue I many other merchandizes very fine, that your worſhip hath not ſeene yet.

Ma. What are they?

Me. Chaines of ieat amber, or ſuch like, tablet iewels, girdles faire to ſee to, cloth of gold the woorſer ſort, head rolles, coifes of gold, ſupporters, gorgets of net worke, wrought ſhirts or ſmockes, necke laces of pearles and amber, all kinde of painting, and perfumes, ſee if you like any.

Ma. We will come another day, more at leaſure to ſee all this.

*Th. It ſeemes to me ſir, that your trade is as that of the * turners, which deceiues boies and gets money.*

* 1. Make tops for children.

Me. Why is my Lady Margaret a boy?

Th. It ſufficeth that ſhe be deceiued.

Me. In faith, he is not to know a little that muſt deceiue her.

Th. She her ſelfe will deceiue her ſelfe.

Me. How?

Th. In giuing money for theſe childiſh toies, which ſhine and yet are not all gold, and when ſhe goes home, it will be founde nothing betweene two platters.

Me. Why is money made, but to make ſhew therewith?

Th. I knowe that this, although it glitter double, it ſhines not.

Ma. I haue alreadie told you ſir, that you goe the common courſe of the moſt, & ſeeing you haue married as other men haue, paſſe that way as other men doe, go not by extremities, for euerie man that is in his extremities, is not a fingers breadth from a foole, theſe be the charges of mariage.

*Th. The helpe of mariage * like the helpe of the beetle vnder the cow-turd, which forſakes the burden as ſoone as they helpe him.*

* The nature of the beetle in the cow-turd when another comes to help him, leaues all: ſo in mariage, when another comes to helpe to maintaine his wife, he forſakes her.

Ma. Aora ſeñór éſſas ſon pendéncias que ſe han de reñir en caſa vámonos.

Th. Vámos ſeñóra, toma vuéſtro dinero Señór mercadér.

Me. Yo quedo muy conténto y beſo a v.m. las manos y vea ſi me manda ótra coſa.

Th. Que con ſalúd que tengamos, nunca mas nos veámos.

Me. Por çierto Señór, yo no ſoy tan yngráto, que cada dia quería vér a v.m. por mi cáſa.

Th. Yo créo que queríades vér mi bólſa mas no a mi.

Me. No ſoy tan codiçióſo como a v. m. le parézco.

Th. No digo yo que lo ſoys, pero apoſtaré que quereis mas un real de a quatro, que uno de a dos.

Me. Por adivino le podrían a v. m. caſtigár.

Th. Lo que con los ojos véo con el dédo lo adivíno.

Ma. A Dios mercadér.

Me. Beſo a v.m. las manos mi Señóra.

Ma. Vámos a ora a la lonja a comprár ſédas.

Th. Que quereis comprár Señora?

Ma. Que terciopélo, raſo, damáſco, tafetán, riço, gorgarán, chameló-te, lanillas para veſtíros a vos y ami.

Th. Para eſſo es meneſtér otro dia y a es tarde vamos a comér que mañána yréinos a comprár eſſo.

Ma. Vamos pues aunque yo mas quiſiéra que quedára oy todo hecho, que no tenér que ſalír mañana otra buelta.

Th. Anda, que bien os holgáis depaſſeár un rato, para que me quereis hazér entendér de el çiélo cebólla?

Ma. No ſeáis maliçióſo que no medraréis.

Th. Muchácho corre, llama a el platéro que venga a peſár la plata y por ſu dinéro.

Ma. Sir, theſe are quarrels to be chidden out at home. Let vs goe.

Th. Let vs goe, take your money Maſter Merchant.

Me. I am very well content, and kiſſe your hands, and ſee if you commannd any thing els.

Th. Sowe may haue health that we neuer ſee one an other more.

Me. Truely ſir I am not ſo ingratefull, but that euerie day I would ſee your worſhip by my houſe.

Th. I beleeue you would ſee my purſe rather then me.

Me. I am not ſo couetous as I ſeeme vnto you.

Th. I ſay not that you are, but I will lay a wager, that you had rather haue two ſhillings than one.

Me. They might well puniſh you for a ſoothſayer.

Th. That which with the eies I ſee, I coniecture with my finger.

Ma. God be with you merchant.

Me. Ladie I kiſſe your hands.

Ma. Let vs goe now to the exchaunge to buy ſilkes.

Th. What would you buy?

Ma. What, plaine velvet, damaske, tafata, vncut velvet, gogram, chamlet, ſarge, to cloath you and my ſelfe.

Th. For all this another day will ſerue, it is late now let vs goe to dinner, for to morrow we will goe to buy this.

Ma. Let vs goe then, although I would rather that al were done to day, then to come foorth another turne to morrow.

Th. Goe, for you take good pleaſure to walke a while, wherfore you would make me beleeue the moone is made of a greene cheeſe?

Ma. Be not malitious, for you ſhall thriue neuer the ſooner.

Th. Boy, run cal the goldſmith, that he come to waigh the plate and fetch his money:

Diálogo tercéro, de un combíte, entre çinco cavalléros amigos, llamádos, Guzman, Rodrígo, don Lorénço, Mendoça, y Osório, un maestre sala, y un paje, en el qual, se trata, de cosas pertenecientes a un combíte con otras pláticas, y dichos agúdos.

G. OLa, está ay algun paje?
P. Señor.
G. Sáues a cása de don Rodrigo?

P. Si Señór.
G. Pues vée allá, díle que le béso las mános, y que si le paréce óra de que nos veámos.

P. Aquí está un criádo de el Señor don Lorénço.
G. Entre.
Cr. Don Lorénço mi Señór, bésa a v.m. las mános y embía a sabér si está en casa, por que tiene un negócio que tratár con.v.m.

G. Que beso a su merçed las manos, y que yo fuera a la Suya, a besárle las si no tuviéra una ocupación forçósa que esperár, la qual tanbien toca a su merçéd que si viniére, será el bien venído y se tratará de todo.
Cr. Beso a v.m. las manos.
G. Anda con Dios, ola Dezíd a el maestre sala que hága ponér éssas mésas, que vernán ya los convidádos.
M. Señór v.m. como se quiére servír oy, ala Ytaliana, o ala Françéza, o a la Yngleſa, o a la Flaménca, o a la Todésca?

G. De todos essos estrémos me sacád vn médio, no quiero tantas çerimónias, como el Ytaliáno, ni quiero tanta curiosidád, como el Françés, ni quiero tanta abundáncia, como el Yngles, ni quiero que la comída sea tan larga, como el Flaménco ni tan únida

The thirde Dialogue of a banquet betweene fiue gentlemen friendes, called *Guſman, Rodricke, ſir Lorenço, Mendoça,* Oſorio, a gentleman vſher, and a Page, in which are handled things belonging to a banquet with other ſpeeches and wittie ſayings.

G. HOe, *is there any Page there?*
P. *Sir.*
G. *Doſt thou knowe maſter Rodrick his houſe?*
P. *Yea ſir.*
G. *Then go thither and tell him that I commend me to him, and if he thinke good now, that we may meete together.*
P. *Heere is a ſeruant of ſir Lorenço.*

G. *Let him come in.*
S. *Sir Lorenço my maſter commends him vnto your worſhip, and ſendes me to know whether you be at home, for hee hath a buſines to entreate of with you.*
G. *I thanke him, and I woulde haue come vnto his houſe to haue ſaluted him, if I had not tarried heere about a buſines of importance, the which alſo concernes him, if hee come he ſhall be welcome, and wee will talke at large.*
S. *I take my leaue of your worſhip.*
G. *God be with you. Ho tel the gentleman vſher that he make the tables to be couered, for the gueſts wil come by and by.*
V. *Sir will your worſhip haue your ſeruice today, after the Italian, after the French, after the Engliſh, after the Flemiſh, or after the Dutch manner?*
G. *Of all theſe extremes take me out one meane, I will not haue ſo many ceremonies as the Italian, neither will I ſo much curioſitie as the French, neither ſuch abundance as the Engliſh, neither will I that the meale be ſo long as the Flemmings, nor ſo moiſt as the*

úmida como el tudésco, mas de todos estos estremos, componéme vn médio a la Española.

Dutch, but of all these extremes, compound me a meane after the Spanish fashion.

M. Ansí se hará como v.m.lo mánda.

V. So shall it be as your worship commandeth.

G. Vuestro mayór cuidádo séa que la comidá sea caliénte y la bevída fría.

G. Let your chiefest care be that the meat be hot, and * *the drinke coole.*

* *In Spaine they coole their wine by setting the flagons in snow water.*

M. Que vínos quiere v.m.

V. What wines will your worship haue?

G. De todos géneros, blánc os, tinto, haloque, clarete, cándia, ribadáuia, san Martín, tóro, y sídra, porque aya de todo.

G. Of all sortes, white sacke, deepe red brackish wine, hallocke, claret, candie, * *Ribadavia,* * *S. Martin, Toro, and Cider, for that there may be of euery sorte.*

* *Ribadáuia a whitish sacke growing in Galicia about a village called Ribadáuia.*

* *Wine of S. Martin the most delicate wine of Spaine growing about S. Martin a towne in the kingdome of Toledo in Spaine.*

P. Aquí viéne el señór don Rodrígo.

P. Heere commeth master Roderick.

G. O señór. v.m. y las buenos áños.

G. Oh sir you are as welcome as the good yeere.

R. Beso a.v.m. las manos.

R. Sir I thanke you hartely.

G. Como está. v.m. paréçe que coxéa.

G. How do you sir, it seemes you halt.

R. Díme vn golpe a el apeár de el cavállo en ésta espinilla.

R. I hit my selfe a blowe in lighting from my horse, in this shin bone.

G. En ora mala séa, veámos si es algo.

G. In ill time, let vs see if it be any thing.

R. ✻ No señór, si no que es como dízen dolór de cobdo, dolór de espóso, duele mucho y dúra poco.

R. No sir, it is (as they say) like the paine of a blow on the elbow, or the sorrowe of a bridegrome, * *it greeueth much and is quickly done.*

* *Because they haue had small conuersation togither to increase loue.*

G. Mas vale ansí.

G. It is the better.

R. Como tiene. v.m. a mi señóra doña Maria y a toda su casa?

R. How doth my lady Mary your wife, and all your familie.

G. A servício de. v.m. aunque ella por no avér me ynbidia díxo, que pues yo comía con mis amígos, ella se quería yr a comér con sus amígas.

G. At your seruice, although she saies (not because she enuies me) that since I banquet with my friendes, she would go to dinner to hir friends.

R. Hízo su merçéd muy discretaménte, en pagár le a. v.m. en la mis-✻ ma moneda.

R. She dealt very discreetely to paie you with the same money.

M. Todos estos señóres conbidádos están aqui, y la comída a púnto quando vuessas merçedes fuéren servídos, se podran asentár.

V. All the gentlemen that are inuited are heere, and dinner is readie, when your worships please, you may sit downe.

G. ✻ Señór don Lorénço. v.m. tiéne las mañas de el Rey que adonde no está no le hállan.

G. Sir Lorenço you haue the propertie of a king, that where he is not, there they finde him not.

L. Y v. m. quiere pareçérse Alçina de quien dize Orlando que por engáño, trayalos hombres a gozár de sus regálos.

L. And you will be like Alcina of whom Orlando maketh mention, which brought men to take pleasure in her daimties to entrap them.

G. Pero, no serán vuessas merçédes convertídos en animáles como ella házia.

G. But you shall not be turned into beastes as she turned them.

L. ✻ No me alegúro, que dexe de bolverse

L. I am not assured of that, for some of vs may

vérſe alguno en çórra.

R. ✻De buen vino quien quiera ſe caça vna en el áño.

G. Cada vno ſu alma en ſu palma, qual el tiempo tal ſea el tiénto. Ea Señores tómen ſillas v. s. mercedes y ſienten ſe.

L. Déxenos v. m. ante todas coſas contenplár vn rato la curioſidád de la méſa.

R. ✻No tiene mas pieças vn juego de maſtre corál, que eſtán hechas de las ſervilletas.

O. Yo aqui véo vna galéra, que no le falta mas, que la chúſma y palaménta.

M. Pues acá eſtá vn cavalloque no ſé yo, ſi el cavallo de Tróya éra tan bien hécho.

L. A mi me ha caído enſuerte el eſcudo de Hércules.

R. Y eſte que eſtá aqui, que es?

M. A mi me pareçe, que es vna pirámida de las de Egipto.

O. O es el ſepulcro de máuſalo, o la torre de babel.

G. Aóra déxen eſſo vueſſas marçédes y ſiéntenſe, ſi, ſon ſervídos.

R. No ſe puede dexár de mirár el caſtillo de la enſaláda.

L. Por mi vida, que no tiéne mejór viſta el de Milán.

G. Si cada coſa ſe ha de mirár de por ſi, yr ſe nos ha el dia en flóres. Cada vna tire ſu ſilla, que éſta no es méſa de cumplimiéntos.

O. No los déve avér entre amigos.

G. Yo ſoy ynimiçíſſimo de çerimónias.

R. ✻A mi no me paréçen bien ningunas, ſi no ſon las que haze la yglefia.

G. Ola, plátos, tome v. m. eſſe ſeñór don Lorénço.

L. Haga v. m. paraſi, que lo miſmo hará cada vno.

R. No ſe qual ſea mejór vſo eſte que vſamos en Eſpáña o el que ſe vſa en ynglatérra.

G. Que

*may ſuffer himſelfe to be * turned into a foxe.* * i. To be drunk

*R. Whoſoeuer loues good wine, * hunts the foxe once a yeere.* * i. Whips the cat, or is drunke once a yeere.

G. Euery one holdes free will in his hands, as the time requires ſo frame thy deſires. Go to gentlemen betake your ſelues to your chaires and ſit downe.

L. Suffer vs I praie aboue all things to beholde a while the curiouſnes of this table.

*R. A inglar hath no more inuentions and peeces then are made in theſe * table napkins.* * Table napkins at a banquet or inuiting in Spaine ſet out with diuers faſhions, as of beaſtes, birds, &c. this the Maeſtreſala alwaies doth.

O. I ſee heere a gally, there wants nothing but the gallie ſlaues and the oares.

M. And here is a horſe, that I know not if the horſe of Troy were ſo wel made.

L. And heere hath fallen to my lot Hercules ſhielde.

R. And this which is heere what is it?

*M. It ſeemes to me to be one of the * Piramides of Egypt.* * There were many Piramides, but two of them were reckoned one of the ſeuen wonders of the world.

*O. Or it is Mauſalus * Tombe, or the tower of Babell.* * Which for the magnificence thereof was accompted one of the woonders of the world, and was built by his wife Queene Artemiſia.

G. Now leaue off this, and ſit downe if it pleaſe you.

R. One cannot chooſe but looke vpon the ſallet made like a caſtle.

L. In faith the caſtle of Milan is no better to ſee to.

G. If we muſt ſtand to behold euery thing by it ſelfe, the time will be gone without doing any thing. Euerie one draw his chaire, for this is not a table of complements.

O. They ought not to be among friends.

G. I am the greateſt enemie in the worlde to ceremonies.

R. None of them ſeeme good vnto me, except it be thoſe which the church makes.

*G. Hola, * diſhes. Take this ſir Lorenſo.* * They eate in little diſhes their meate & not vpon trenchers in Spaine.

L. Make a diſh for your ſelfe, for euerie one will do the like.

R. I knowe not which is the better cuſtome which we vſe in Spaine, or that which is vſed in England.

G. What

G. Que es el vſo de ynglatérra?
R. Comér primero lo cozído, que lo aſſado, nos ótros hazémos a el revés.
L. Segun réglas de mediçína primero ſe déven comér los manjáres que ſon mas duros de digeſtión
G. Y eſtá eſſo en razón para que ſe venga a hazér la digeſtión en vn tiempo.
L. Pues que ſea mas duro de digeſtión, lo aſſado que lo cozído, es coſa clára.
O. Yo como ſoy mas golóſo, hallo ótra razón.
L. Qual es?
O. Que toda coſa aſſada, es mas ſabróſa que la cozída, y áſſi, yo lo querría a el principío por que ſobre buen cimiénto buen edificio ſe háze.

* *He that is ſilent gathereth reaſons to confute his aduerſarie.*

Me. Pues yo aunque cállo, piédras apáño.
R. Anda v. m. diſcréto, que obéja que bála bocado piérde.
G. A mi me paréçe que ándan ya en ſeco eſtos molinos.
L. De la boca me lo quitó v.m.
G. Pues ſi yo lo quité, júſto es que yo lo pónga. Ola, dad nos de bevér, cada vno pida lo que mas guſto le diére, que de todo ay.
R. Páje yo ſoy muy devóto de a quel ſánto que partió la capa con el pobre.

* *Saint Martin gaue a peece of his cloake to a poore man, and wine of Saint Martin the moſt daintie of all Spaine.*

P. A buen entendedór pocas palabras, de lo de ſant Martin quiére v.m.
R. O como éres diſcréto, Dios me de ſiempre contienda, conquien me entiénda.
L. Pues yo vn tiempo fui toréro, y me holgáva ſiempre con * toros bravos.

* *He alludes to wine of Toro, wines called* vino de Toro, *which is a Bull, as alſo a townes name.*

G. Señores yo brindo a quien toſſiére,
O. ✠ Vala me Dios y que res friádos que eſtámos todos, no ſe tóſſe mas en vn ſermón de quareſma.
R. Eſſa gráçia, dízen que tenémos los Eſpañóles que ſómos como mónas

G. *What is the maner of England?*
R. *To eate their ſodde meate firſt before their roaſt, we doe quite contrarie.*
L. *According to the rules of Phiſicke, men ought firſt to eate thoſe meates which are moſt hard of digeſtion.*
G. *And that ſtands with reaſon, bicauſe digeſtion may be made togither.*
L. *Then that roaſt meate is more hard of digeſtion then the ſodde, it is a thing out of doubt.*
O. *I that am a great eater, finde another reaſon.*
L. *What is it?*
O. *That euery thing roaſted is more ſweet to the taſte then the ſodde, and ſo therefore woulde I haue it at the firſt, for vpon a good foundation, a good building is made.*
M. * *Although I hold my peace, I gather vp ſtones.*
R. *You ſaie very right, for that ſheepe that bleateth looſeth a bit.*
G. *Me thinkes theſe milles go now drie.*
L. *You tooke it out of my mouth.*
G. *If I tooke it out, it is reaſon I ſhoulde put it in. Hola giue vs drinke, euerie one aske for that which he likes beſt, for there is of euery ſorte.*
R. *Page, I haue great deuotion to that* * *Saint which departed with a peece of his cloake to a poore man.*
P. *To a good vnderſtander a worde is enough, you woulde haue that of Saint Martin.*
R. *O how you are in the right, God ſend me to diſpute alway with him that vnderſtandeth what I ſay.*
L. *I was once a courſer of buls, and I alwaies tooke pleaſure in fierce* * *buls.*
G. *Gentlemen, I drinke to him that ſhall cough.*
O. *God bleſſe me, and what coldes we haue all taken, there is not more coughing in a lenten ſermon.*
R. *This faſhion (they ſay) that we Spanyards haue, that we are as apes, which*

mónas amígos de hazér lo que vémos hazér a otros.

L. ✻ Anſi dize vn refrán, ſi no hago lo que véo, todo me méo.

G. Cada vno aſga de ſu perdíz, y la aderéçe como mejór le pareçiére, ay aſtán limónes, limas, naránjas, pimiénta, y todo lo demás.

R. ✻ La perdiz, dízen los médicos, que ſe a de comér entre tres compañéros paraque no haga mál.

L. Tienen razón que han de ſer el hombre, vn gato, y vn pérro.

O. Vueſtras mercedes no han notado la variedád de aſſádos que aqui nos han traído.

R. Que eſtá debaxo de aquella enramáda?

G. Vna cabéça de javalí.

R. Eſtónçes rámos de tavérna ſon aquellos.

L. Antes a el contrário que el ramo en la tabérna llama a los borrachos a el vino, y aquellos llámán a el miſmo vino, aſi como la piédra ymán el azéro.

O. A Señór Mendóza partí de eſſe Xigóte con vueſtros amígos.

M. ✻ Señór el mio murió ſúpito.

R. Paréçe que havéis reſpondído, un gran Adefésio. i. diſparate.

O. Pues aunque lo paréçe, no lo es, que a ſu provecho ha habládo el señór Mendóza.

R. Pues, ſi no nos lo declara, no ſaldrémos de dúbda.

M. Señór, es el caſo, que dos compañéros llegáron a una vénta y como no uviéſſe otra coſa que çenár, que una gallína aſsáda, el uno de ellos que tenía buena hambre, y éra hombre aſtúto, díxo a el otro compañero, entanto que yo apáro ésta gallina, contáme de que murió vueſtro padre: el otro ſe començó a enternecér, y con lágrimas le relató un proçéſo bien largo de la enfermedád de ſu padre, y como avía muerto, en lo qual tardó

which doe that which they ſee others to doe.

L. So ſaith the prouerbe, If I doe not what I ſee, I all to bepiſſe me.

G. Euery one faſten on his partridge and order him as beſt ſhall ſeeme good vnto him, there are limons and orenges, pepper, and all things elſe.

R. A partridge, as phiſitions ſay, is to be eaten betweene three companions, that he may doe no harme.

L. They ſay true, that is, betweene a man, a cat and a dog.

O. You haue not marked the varietie of the roaſt, which here they haue brought vs.

R. What is vnder thoſe greene boughes?

G. The head of a wilde boare.

R. Then it is the buſh of a tauerne.

L. Rather the contrarie, for the tauerne buſh inuites thoſe that loue drinke to the wine, and theſe boughes inuites or drawes vnto it wine it ſelfe, euen as the loadſtone draweth to it ſteele.

O. A maſter Mendoza, part this roaſt leg of mutton with your friends.

M. Sir mine died ſuddenly.

R. It ſeemes you haue anſwered with a ſpeech quite beſide the purpoſe.

O. Although it ſeeme, it is not ſo, for maſter Mendoza hath ſpoken it for his aduantage.

R. But if he do not expound it, we ſhall not know what it meanes.

M. Sir, this it is, that two companions came to an Inne, vpon the high way, and as there was nothing elſe to ſuppe withall, but one hen roaſted: one of them which was well hungrie & a craftie fellow, ſaide to the other companion, in the meane while that I breake vp and order this hen, recount vnto me whereof your father died. The other began to be tender harted, and with teares related vnto him a long proceſſe of the ſickneſs of his father, & how he died, wherein he ſtood ſo long, that when he remembred

tardó tanto, que quando acordó ya el otro se avía comído, casi toda la gallina, el hallando se burlado, quiso esquitárse y díxo le compañero, pues yo os he contádo la muerte de mi padre, contáme vos, la, de el vuestro, el compañero, por no perdér La parte que le quedáva y concluír presto razónes, respondió, Señor, el mio murió súpito: con la qual Repuésta el otro quedó muy burlado y el le ayudó a despachár lo que faltáva.

membred himselfe, the other had alreadie eaten almost all the hen, he finding himselfe mocked, would quite himselfe, and saide vnto him, companion, seeing I haue tolde you the death of my father, doe you tell me now the death of your father: his companion for that hee would not looſe that part which remained, and because he would be short answered, Sir, my father died suddenly, with which answere he gaue his fellow a scoffe, and himselfe time to dispatch the rest.

R. Pues aquí no corre ese riesgo.

R. But here is not the like danger.

M. No, pero yo soy como el cuclillo que no canto bien hasta que tengo el estómago lléno.

M. Although not, I am like the cuckow, which sing not vntill I haue my stomacke full.

L. Con liçençia de el señór Guzman quiéro ymbiár esta pella de manjár blanco a un amigo.

L. With leaue of Master Guzman, *I will send this round ball of* * Manjár blanco *to a friend.*

* *A meat made of breasts of hens, milke, sugar, rice beaten, and spices mixed withall, one of the daintiest meates vsed.*

G. Con mi liçéncia no yrá sola si no la acompáña v. m. con aquel pávo, o este faisán o el francolín.

G. With my leaue it shall not goe alone, but that you accompanie with it, this peacock, this feasant, or this francolin bird.

R. Por vida de don Lorénço es amigo o amiga?

R. I pray you hartily Sir Lorenço, *is it a he friend or she friend?*

L. ✻Quereis que confiesse sin tormento.

L. Will you that I confesse without the racke?

G. ✻Y quando os le den antes mártir que confessór.

G. And when they doe racke you, rather proone a martyr then a confessor.

O. ✻O que reverenda que viéne nuestra madre la olla.

O. O what a reuerend person comes here, our mother the meate.

R. Y bien adornáda de todas sus pertenéncias.

R. And well adorned with all her appurtenances.

M. Yo deséo savér, donde o porque le llamaron olla podrída?

M. I desire to knowe, from whence or why they called it * Olla podrida.

* *A rotten or putrified pot. Also a hotchpotch of many meates togither*

L. Metaforicaménte, porque así como en vn muladár se púdren muchas cósas diferéntes, y de todas se haze la basúra así la olla que es conpuésta de muchas cosas se viéne a hazér vn guizádo o potáje.

L. Metaphorically, because euen as in a dung hill many different things rot together, and of all these they make dung for the field: euen so the pot which is compounded of many things is made one iellie or potage.

M. Tan buena metáfora fue essa como el que llamó Rey a el que guarda los puercos.

M. This was as good a metaphor as that of him, which called the king the keeper of hogs.

O. Por mi passatiempo yo me quiero poner a contár de quantas cosas está conpuésta su merced de nuestra olla, carnero, váca, toçino.

O. For my recreation I will set my selfe to reckon, of how many things this worshipfull the pot, is compounded, first mutton, beefe, and bacon.

d.L. ✻Essas

L. These

d.L. ✻ Eſſas ſon las tres poténcias de la olla como las de la alma, memória, entendimiénto, voluntád.

L. Theſe are the three powers of the pot, as the three powers of the ſoule, memorie, vnderſtanding, will.

O. Luego ſe ſigue repóllo, návos, çevollas, ajos.

O. Now followe cabbage, turneps, onyons, garlicke.

d.L. ✻ Eſſas ſon las quatro virtúdes cardináles.

L. Theſe be the fower cardinall vertues.

O. Cavéças y pies de áves, culantro verde, alcarabéa, comínos, todas eſpécias, las de mas yérvas, y no las conóſco, otro las quénte.

O. The heades and feete of birdes, the herbe carobes or S. Iohns herbe, comines, all ſortes of ſpices, the moſt part of herbes, I knowe them not, let another ſpeake of them.

d.R. Lo que yo contaré deſpues, ſerá lo bien que me ha ſabído.

R. That which I will ſaie of it ſhall be the good I haue taſted in it.

d.L. De el marques chapín vitélo Ytaliáno, que fue uno de los mas valiéntes ſoldados que ha tenido aquella nación, ſe quenta que quando fue a Eſpáña le dieron tanto guſto eſtas ollas, que nunca querría comér en ſu caſa, ſi no que yendo por la calle olía en caſa de algun labradór rico, adonde ſe comía alguna olla de éſtas, y ſe entráva allá y ſe aſentáua a comér con el.

L. Of marques Chapin Vitelo, an Italian, which was one of the moſt valiant ſouldiers, which that nation hath had, it is ſaide, that when he went to Spaine, theſe hodgpots liked his taſte ſo well, that he neuer woulde dine in his owne houſe, but that going in the ſtreete, where hee ſmelt in the houſe of any rich farmer, where any of theſe hodgpots were eaten, there he entred, and ſate downe to diner with him.

d.R. Devía lo de hazér por comér a coſta agéna.

R. Belike hee did that to dine at another mans charges.

L. No, que antes que ſaliéſſe mandáva a ſu mayordómo pagáſſe toda la coſta de la olla.

L. No, for before he went out of dores hee commanded his ſteward to paie all the coſt of the hodgepot.

M. Pare, mira como pónes eſſe plato no deribes el ſaléro.

M. Staie, looke howe thou putteſt this platter, do not throwe downe the ſalt-ſeller.

L. Si, ſi, guarda, que es el aguéro de los mendózas.

L. Yea, yea, take heede, for it is the Mendozas malum omen.

R. Ya todos ſomos Mendózas en eſſo.

R. We are all Mendozas in this.

L. Eſſa raſtra nos quedó de la gentilidád.

L. This trace doth remaine to vs from the Gentiles.

M. Hemos viſto eſperiéncias muy verdadéras.

M. Wee haue ſeene many true examples heereof.

O. ✻ Créo en Dios y no en putas viéjas.

O. I beleeue in God, and not in olde wiues tales.

M. Eſſas ſon de las que yo me procúro ſiempre guardár.

M. Thoſe are they from which I alwaies ſeeke to keepe my ſelfe.

R. O ſeñor Guzman para que es eſto que ſe trae agora?

R. O maſter Guzman, wherefore is this that they bring now?

G. Dízen que parà comér.

G. They ſaie for to eate.

R. Si, peró éra meneſtér hazér nuévos eſtómagos, en que echállo.

R. Yea, but it were need to make ſtomacks to receiue it.

O. Mandár los hazér de barro a truéco de

O. Cauſe them to bee made of claie, for a ſmall

de poco dinéro.

M. Eſtas tortas reáles, ſon como cuerpo que no ocúpa lugár.

small price of money.

M. Theſe riall tartes are as the bodie which filleth no place.

* *Made of the heades, liuers, harts, breaſtes, feete, of duckes geeſe, or other birds, &c.*

L. Yo tengo de provár eſta pepitória.

*L. I will proone this * Pepitório or gallimaufrie.*

R. Yo conel * manjár reál me acomódo.

R. I do applie my ſelfe to this riall diſh of meate.

* *Of paſte of almondes and ſugar, egges, breaſts of hens, milke, cynamon, and diuers ſorts of ſpices verie like* Manjar blanco.

G. No ay quien pruéve eſótros guiſádos, éſtos torreſnos lampreádos, aquel adobado, el carnéro verde, las albóndigas, ni lo de mas.

G. Is there no bodie to proone theſe other meates, theſe hogs liuers with the hogs caule fried with the fat, that hodgepot of mutton, mutton ſtuffed with parſly, the chopped meat made into round bals, neither the reſt.

T. ✻ Todo éſſo es como Pedro por demas.

L. All this is as Peter too much.

O. O como alla voy no hago mengua.

O. Oh as I goe there I neuer faile.

G. Alçalo pues muchacho deſembaráça y trae aquella fruta de ſartén.

G. Take off boy, rid the table, and bring theſe fritters.

* *Wine ſodden to the third part for a ſauce for the fritters.*

P. Aqui eſtá ſeñor, y la melója y tódo.

*P. Here it is Sir, and the * Melója and all.*

R. Eſſo allá a los aguados, que la borracha no quiere páſſa.

*R. That there is for thoſe that drinke water, for one that loues wine loues not to eate * raiſins.*

* *But ſalt meats to make them drinke.*

G. Traé pues la fruta de póſtre, camuéças, péras, azeitúnas, nuézes, javellánas, y la cája de mermeláda.

G. Bring fruit for the laſt ſeruice, pippins, peares, olines, wallnuts, ſmall nuts, and the boxe of marmalade.

L. Haſta quando hemos de comér?

L. Till when ſhall we eate?

R. ✻ Haſta enfermár, como dize el refrán.

R. Vntill we be ſicke, as ſaith the prouerbe.

L. Y deſpues ayunár haſta ſanár.

L. And afterward to faſt till wee bee in health.

O. Levánta eſta méſa paje, que es ya gula tanto comér.

O. Take away this table, Page, for it is gluttonie to eate ſo much.

M. ✻ Yo he perdido la gana, como ſi me la quitáran con la mano.

M. I haue loſt my ſtomack, as though they had taken it from me with ones hand.

L. El mejór remédio, que halláron los filóſofos, contra la hambre, fue eſte.

L. The beſt remedie that euer philoſophers found againſt hunger, was this.

R. ✻ Eſa filoſofía algo es gruéſſa de hiláça.

R. This philoſophie is ſomewhat of a groſſe threed.

O. Mejór ſe podrá dezír verdád apuráda que ya ſaveís lo que es.

O. Better may you ſay a refined truth, you know what I meane.

L. ✻ Ya ſe que verdádes apurádas ſon neçedádes.

L. I knowe that refined truthes are fooleries.

O. Mas pulído lo quería yo dezír.

O. I would giue it a better terme.

R. Como?

R. How?

O. Yndiſcreçiónes.

O. Indiſcretions.

d.L. Tanto monta cortár, como deſatar,

L. It comes all to one, to cut it off or vntie it,

tár, como díxo Alexandre.

d.R. Ola paje, tráe unos náipes entretengámos el tiempo.

M. Eſſo me contenta, vengan que deſséo eſquitár me de un eſcudo que perdí eſtótro día.

d.L. ✻ No me péſa ami de que mi híjo juégue, ſino de que ſe quiere eſquitár.

M. El tahúr, chica ocaſión ha meneſtér para bolvér a el juégo.

d.L. A mi me pareçe que ſóla una.

M. Qual es?

d.L. Tenér dinéros.

M. Ni al tahúr faltó que jugár, ni al golóſo que comér, ni al enduradór que endurár, ni al borácho que bevér.

d.R. Aqui eſtán los náipes, que jugarémos?

d.L. Juguémos gana piérde.

M. Es juego de mucha fléma.

d.L. Pues séa a el triúnfo.

M. Quéde para los viéjos.

d.L. A los çientos.

M. Deſvanéçe ſe me la cabéça, de eſtár ſiempre contándo.

d.L. Menos os agradará el chilindrón.

M. E'ſſe para las mugéres de tras de los tiçónes.

d.L. No es, ſi no que vos no querćis juego de virtúd, ſi no de arrebáta cápas.

M. Para que hemos de eſtár gaſtándo ✻ tiempo, ſino lo que ſe a de empeñár, venda ſe, como dízen.

d.R. Si, por que haziénda hécha, no da prieſſa.

d.L. ✻ Y mas quando le gánan a el hombre ſu dinero, le quitan preſto decuidádo.

M. He aqui eſtán los naipes juguémos treínta por fuérça, o los albúres que todos éſtos ſon buénos juegos.

d.R. Yo no ſoy amigo de ellos, ſi no de juegos de primór, como el Reynádo, el tres dos y as, triunfo calládo y ótros ſemejantes.

O. Ora

it, as Alexander ſaid.

R. Hola page, bring cardes, let vs paſſe away the time.

M. That pleaſeth me well, let them come, for I deſire to quit my ſelfe of a crowne, that I loſt this other day.

L. It greeues me not that my ſonne is a gameſter, but that he will goe to quit himſelfe.

M. The gameſter requireth but ſmall occaſion to returne to plaie.

L. It ſeemes to me but one onely.

M. What is it?

L. That he haue money to doe it.

M. Neither hath the gameſter euer wanted money to play, nor the glutton nous to eate, nor the patient to ſuffer, nor the louer of drinke to drinke.

R. Here are the cards, what ſhall we play at?

L. Let vs play at loadam.

M. It is a plaie of much patience.

L. Then let it be at trumpe.

M. Let that be for old men.

L. At mount ſant.

M. It makes my head to be in a ſwoune, to be alwaies counting.

L. Leſſe will the play of Chilindron like you.

M. That is for women by the fire ſide.

L. It is not, but that you will not haue any game of vertue but ſweepe ſtake play.

M. Wherefore ſhould we waſte time, but that which we muſt pawne, let vs ſell our right as they ſay.

R. Yea, but ones ſubſtance made vp, let there be no haſte to loſe ones money.

L. And moreouer, when they win a mans money from him, they ſtraightway take him out of care.

M. Behold here are the cardes, let vs play at thirtie perforce or Albures, for theſe are good plaies.

R. I loue not theſe but games of chiefeſt price, as the Reynádo, *the three, two and ace ſtill trumpe, and other the like.*

O. Ora por quitár todos de contiénda yo quiéro dar vn médio y ſea eſte la priméra.

O. Now to take away all occaſion of ſtrife, I will giue a meane, and let it be Primera.

M. Muy bien avéis dicho que es médio entre los eſtrémos.

M. You haue ſaide very well, for it is a meane betweene extremes.

d.L. Yo entiéndo que ſe llamó priméra, porque tiene el primero lugár entre los juegos de náypes.

L. I take it that it is called Primera, *becauſe it hath the firſt place at the play at cardes.*

d.R. Alto,que ha de ſer el tanto?

R. Let vs goe, what is the ſumme that we play for?

M. Quatro reáles y dies y ſeis de ſaca.

M. Two ſhillings ſtake, and eight ſhillings reſt.

d.L. Pues barajá eſſos naipes bien.

L. Then ſhuffle the cardes well.

O. Yo álço por mano,figura úvo de ſér, no querría yo yr hecho figura ſin blanca.

O. I liſt to ſee who ſhall deale, it muſt be a coate card, I would not be a coat with neuer a blanke in my purſe.

d.R. Yo un ás alçé.

R. I did liſt an ace.

d.L. Yo un quátro.

L. I a fower.

M. Yo vn ſeis,con que ſoy mano.

M. I a ſixe,whereby I am the eldeſt hand.

O. Véngan las cartas que yo las doy una,dos,tres,quatro. Vna,dos, tres,quatro.

O. Let the cardes come to me,for I deale them, one,two,three,fower,one, two,three,fower.

M. Paſo.

M. Paſſe.

d.R. Paſo.

R. Paſſe.

d.L. Paſo.

L. Paſſe.

O. Enbído un tanto.

O. I ſet ſo much.

M. No le quiero.

M. I will none.

d.R. No le quiero.

R. Ile none.

d.L. Yo por fuérça avré de querér,echád cartas.

L. I muſt of force ſee it,deale the cards.

M. Echad me quatro cartas he aqui mi tanto.

M. Giue me fower cards,Ile ſee as much as he ſets.

d.R. He aqui el mio, cada uno meta el ſuyo.

R. See heere my reſt,let euery one be in.

M. Buelvo a paſár.

M. I am come to paſſe againe.

d.R. Yo tanbien.

R. And I too.

d.L. Yo hago lo própio.

L. I do the ſelfe ſame.

O. Yo enbído mi reſto.

O. I ſet my reſt.

M. Quiero le.

M. Ile ſee it.

d.R. Yo tanbien.

R. I alſo.

b.L. Pues yo no me puedo echár.

L. I cannot giue it ouer.

M. Yo híze una primerilla.

M. I was a ſmall prime.

d.L. Yo voy a flux.

L. I am fluſh.

M. No querría yo que le hiziéſſedes.

M. I would you were not.

d.L. Es eſſa buena promixidád?

L. Is this good neighbourhood?

M. ❧ La caridád bien ordenáda comiénça de ſi míſmo.

M. Charitie well placed, doth firſt beginne with ones ſelfe.

O. Yo he hecho cinquénta y çinco con que máto ſu priméra.

O. I made fiue and fiftie, with which I win his prime.

d.L. Yo flux con que tíro.

L. I fluſh whereby I draw.

d.R. No juégo masa éſte juégo.

R. I play no more at this play.

M. Ni yo a ótro ninguno que voy a vn negócio

M. Neither I at any other, for I muſt goe about

negócio que me ympórta.

d.L. Pajes toma cada quatro reáles de baráto.

Pa. Centuplum acipias.

Pa. En el çielo lo halle v. m. colgádo de vn garaváto.

about a buſines that concernes me.

L. Pages take euerie one two ſhillings a peece of the winnings.

P. I pray God you may receiue it a hundred fold.

P. In heauen I pray God you may finde it hanged on a hooke.

Diálogo quarto, entre dos amígos llamádos el uno *Mora*, el otro *Aguilár* y un moço de mulas y una Ventéra, trátan *ſe en el de las cóſas tocántes a el camíno con muy gracióſos dichos y chiſtes.*

The fourth Dialogue betweene two friendes, the one called Mora, the other *Aguilar and a mulettier and a woman Inkeeper*: Heerein are handled things pertaining to the way with very pleaſant ſayings, and gracious ſpeeches.

M. O La Pedro havéis traído mi mula?

M. HO Peter haue you brought my mule?

P. Señór ſi, aquí eſtá la mohína.

*P. Yea ſir, heere is the * Mohina.*

M. Mohina es nunca buéna.

M. Mohina is neuer good.

P. Por que, Señor?

P. Why ſir?

M. ✻Por que ni mula mohína, ni moça marína, ni moço Pedro en cáſa, ni Abád por Vezíno, ni poyo a la puerta, no es bueno.

*M. Bicauſe neither a mule with a blacke muſſell, nor a maide that hath paſſed the ſea, nor a ſeruant * Peter in ones houſe, nor a neighbour abbot, nor a Well at the dore, is euer good.*

P. Yo le prométo a v. m. que es mejór éſta, que la que araſtró a el cura quando dezía Dominus providebit.

*P. I promiſe your worſhip that ſhe is better then that which dragged along * the curate when he ſaid, Dominus prouidebit.*

M. Es vieja?

M. Is ſhe old?

P. Nunca la vi naçér, mas yo créo que mas viéja éra ſu madre.

P. I ſawe hir not foaled, but I beleeue that hir dame was elder.

M. Tira cozes?

M. Doth ſhe kicke?

P. Nunca una ſola.

P. Shee neuer gines one alone.

M. Siempre ſon a pares, camína bien?

M. They are alwaies by couples, doth ſhee trauell well?

P. Todo lo que ánda ſe dexa atrás.

P. She neuer trauels but ſhee leaues the way behinde her.

M. Tan buenas grácias tiéne a fee que me va enamorándo.

M. She hath ſo good tricks in faith, that I am in loue with her.

P. Vna tiene ſobre todas que es grande Oſtróloga.

P. One ſhe hath aboue all, for ſhe is a great Aſtronomer.

M. Como anſi?

M. How ſo?

P. Conoçe mejór que vn relóx quando es médio dia, y luego pide çebáda, y ſi no ſe la dan díze lunes

P. She knowes better then a clocke when it is noone, and foorthwith ſhe lookes for prouender, and if they

* Mohína, ſignifieth anger, paſſion, diſquietnes, churliſhnes. Alſo a ſhee mule with a blacke face or muſſell, alwaies hauing ladiſh trickes.

* i. A knauiſh ſernant.

* A curate falling off his mule hanging in the ſtirrup was dragged ſo a long, till a laborer in the fielde tooke him out.

lunes y no ay paſſár de allí.

gine her none, then ſhe ſaies lunes, and ſtirres not a foote from the place.*

* Lunes, *meaning heere the grunting voice of a mule or horſe, but* Lunes *properly ſignifieth Monday.*

M. Buen remédio para eſſo rogár ſe lo con la eſpuela.

M. A good remedie for this to intreat her with the ſpurre.

P. Es flaquiſſima de memória.

P. She is moſt weake of memorie.

M. Como?

M. How?

P. Aunque le hínguen vn palmo de eſpuela a dos paſſos que da, ſe le ha ya oluidádo.

P. Although you ſtrike into her a hands breadth of the ſpurre, within two ſteps after ſhe hath forgotten it.

M. ✻ Traelda, no ſe me da náda, que topádo ha Sancho con ſu Roçíno y ſi ella es traydora yo ſoy alebóſo, y nos entenderémos a coplas.

M. Bring her, I care not, for Sancho hath met with his palfrey, and if ſhe be a knauiſh iade I am as knauiſh a rider, and we ſhall vnderſtand one another by couples.*

* *A ſcabbed horſe fit for a ſcalde ſquier.*

P. ✻ En yendo v.m. con cuydádo hará de ella çéra y Pávilo que ella con quien ſe deſcuyda úſa ſus tretas.

P. *You trauelling with hir, with good heed, you may agree like the* waxe and the weeke, but ſhee with one that is not aware of hir will plaie hir part like a fencer.*

* *The waxe of the candle, and the weeke of the candle, i. all in al*

M. Echalde la ſilla, apretálde bien la síncha ponelde gurupéra atahárre y pretál, acorta eſſos eſtribos que yo me averné con ella.

M. Set on the ſaddle, girde hir harde with the girts, put on the crooper and poitrell, make ſhorter theſe ſtirrups, for I will make agreement with hir.

P. Quiero ponér, vnas aciónes nuévas por mas ſeguridád.

P. I will put on newe ſtirrup leathers for more ſecuritie.

M. Echálde el freno, ponéd le bien el bocádo y acorrád la cabeçáda mirád ſi eſtá bien herráda de todos quatro pies.

M. Put on the bridle, make the bit faſt, make ſhorter the headſtall, looke if ſhe be well ſhod of all fower feete.

* Manos, *i. the forefeete.*

P. * En las mános, buenas herradúras y clávos tiene, de los pies de ſuyo gaſta.

P. On the forefeete ſhe hath good ſhooes and nailes, on the binder feete ſhe weares out hir owne hoofe.*

* *With kicking.*

M. Echáldo el coxín y porta mantéo.

M. Put the cuſhion on the ſaddle and the portemanteau.

A. Ea compañero hémos ya de acabár de ſalír oy de aqui?

A. How now companion, ſhall we make an end that we may get hence to day?

M. Ya vos venís cavalgando?

M. What are you come already, and a horſbacke?

A. ✻ Vos tardáis mas en componér os que vna nóbia.

A. You tarrie longer in ſetting your ſelfe in order then a bride.

M. Vueſtra mula es manſa?

M. Is your mule gentle?

A. Como vna borrega no lo veis que ſufre maléta.

A. As gentle as a lambe, do you not ſee he beares a maile.

M. ✻ De el água mánza me libre dios, que de la braba yo me guardaré.

M. From the ſtil water, God keepe me, from the raging, I will keepe my ſelfe.

A. A la vueſtra, baſta le ſer mohína.

A. For your mule, it is ſufficient, that ſhe is a mule with a blacke muzzle.

M. Mal conocéys vos aquien nunca viſtes, pues a fee que eſtá granduáda por zalamánca.

M. You hardly know him whom you neuer ſaw, but in faith this mule hath taken degree in Zalamanca.

A. En

A. In

A. En que facultád?

M. En la de la vellaqueriá, bachilléra en ártes de tirár cózes, licenciáda en léyes de véntas y de meſónes, y doctóra es en aſtrología y matemáticas.

A. Por eſſo eſtá ſiempre mirando a el çielo.

M. Es por contemplár los áſtros y planétas y ſignos y ſus cúrſus.

A. Vámos de aquí que tenémos larga la jornada.

M. Quantas leguas penſáys caminár oy?

A. Yo querría que doze.

M. Pues ala mano de dios Pedro ten eſſe eſtríbo.

A. Pedro os Llamáys compañéro?

P. A ſervício de v.m.

A. Pues no le hága Dios mas mal a Pedro de el que ſe le alcánça.

P. No ay porque Dios de ſalúd a ſu merçéd.

A. Sé que las pullas no ſe han de echár a los amígos.

M. ✻ De amígo a amígo chínche en el ójo.

A. Yo no quiero pléito con vos Pédro, que ſabéis mucho.

P. Mas *Sábe vn torézno.

A. Moço de mulas vn punto ſáve mas que el diáblo.

M. Pues que penſáis vos que le falta a Pedro para diablo?

P. No mas que vn año de aprendiz y vn garaváto.

A. Para que el garaváto?

P. Para ſacár a vueſtras merçédes de la caldéra quando allá váyan.

M. Noſotros no hémos de ýr a el ynfiérno

P. No ſe yrán mas lleváros hán.

M. Aredro váyas malo, ergo maledicte diabole.

A. Pedro amigo de que ſe haze la puta viéja?

P. De la puta móça.

M. No ſe haze ſi no de ſeldo y eneldo y de el cagaxón mordéldo y de el polvo de las * éras.

A. De

A. *In what arte?*

M. *In the arte of villanie, Bachelor of the kicking art, Licentiat of lawes in Innes, and doctor in Aſtrologie, and the Mathematikes.*

A. *For this cauſe, ſhee lookes alwaies towards heauen.*

M. *It is to contemplate the ſtars, planets, and ſignes, and their courſes.*

A. *Let vs go, for we haue a long iourney.*

M. *How many leagues do you thinke to trauell to day?*

A. *I would willingly go twelue.*

M. *Then in the name of God, Peter holde this ſtirrup.*

A. *Friend are you called Peter?*

M. *At your ſeruice ſir.*

A. *Then God do no more miſchiefe to Peter, then that he knowes himſelfe how to practiſe.*

P. *There is no cauſe why God gine you health ſir.*

A. *I know that men ought not to flout their friends.*

M. *One friend to another friend, a * Cinche in the eie.*

A. *I will not go to law with you Peter, for that you know ſo much.*

P. *A raſher of bacon ſauers more.*

P. *A muliter knowes one point more then the diuell.*

M. *Why what thinke you, what wants Peter to become a diuell?*

P. *No more but a yeeres apprentiſhip, and a fleſh-hooke.*

A. *Why a fleſh-hooke?*

P. *To pull out your worſhips out of the caulderne when you go thither.*

M. *We are not to go to hell.*

P. *You are not to go, but they are to carrie you thither.*

M. *Come behinde me therefore euill ſpirit, Maledicte diabole.*

A. *Friend Peter, of what is an old whore made of?*

P. *Of a yoong whoore.*

M. *It is not made but of thy ſelfe and the herb dill, & of ſhitting eate thy fill, & of the duſt of barn floore, or of the duſt of which thou art thy ſelfe.*

* Chinche, *a little rounde creature with many feete, in hot countries, breeding in beds, bites worſe then a louſe, and ſtinketh filthily.*

* Sabér *i. To know. Alſo to ſauor well in taſte, as meate, drinke.*

* éras, *hath two ſignifications, one for the floore where they threſh their corne, and alſo thou art.*

A. De cara me le véo y tiéne alpargátes, y va a pié.

* *Shooes of packthred made for footemen or lackeies to travell a foote.*

M. Pedro mira que te dize no reſpóndes?

P. ✻ No óygo que ſoy ſordo de vna muela.

M. ✻ Pues a el maeſtro Cuchilláda?

P. No me laſtíma mucho eſta Herída que es dáda vñas arríba, peró guarde ſe de el rebés que yo tiraré vñas abájo.

A. Pedro yo entiendo que ſoys vos aquel que Llamávan de vrde malas.

P. Pues todo el mundo ojo alerta que alguna téngo de vrdír en eſte camíno.

A. Pedro alli viéne vn, caminánte échale vna pulla.

P. Ola hermano por donde van?

C. A do?

P. En caſa de la puta que os parió.

A. Buena a fee otra a el compañéro que quéda atrás.

P. A ſeñór es ſuyo el mulo?

C. Qual mulo?

P. Aquel que beſéis en el cúlo.

A. Eſte cavallero que viene muy brábo no baya ſin la ſuya.

P. A ſenor v.m.a caſo va a londres?

C. Si voy porque lo dezís.

P. Pues cagaxón para quien va a Londres.

M. Que bonito es Pedro ſi ſe lavaſſe.

P. Antes deſpues de lavado no valgo nada.

A. Quanto avrémos andádo Pedro?

P. ✻ Nunca buelvo a mirár atrás, por no ſer como la mugér de Lot.

A. Quanto nos falta de aqui a el primer Pueblo?

P. Legua y miérda.

M. La legua andarémos noſotros, eſotra vos la paſaréis.

A. Pues por que ſe paſſe ſin ſentír quenta vn quento Pedro.

P. De dinéros para mi le contára yo de buena gana.

*A. I ſee him iuſt ouer againſt me, and he hath * ſhooes of packthred, and hee goes a foote.*

M. Peter, harke what he ſaith vnto thee, doeſt thou not anſwere?

P. I heare not, for I am deafe of one of my chocke teeth.

M. What hath the maſter of Fence a blowe or venie?

P. This wound hurts me not much, for it is giuen with the hand vpward, but beware of the ſwaſh blow, for I will draw it with the hand downwards.

A. Peter I vnderſtande that you are hee which they called a plotter of knaueries?

P. Euery one looke to himſelfe, for I muſt plot ſomthing this iourney.

A. Peter there commeth a traueller, beſtowe a quip on him.

P. Hola brother, which way go they?

T. Whither?

P. To the houſe of the queane thy mother.

A. Good in faith, another to his companion, which remaines behind.

P. Ho ſir, is the mule yours?

T. What mule?

P. That whoſe arſe kiſſe you.

A. This gentleman which goeth ſo bodily, let him not paſſe without his flout.

P. Ho ſir goes your worſhip to London?

T. Yea, I go for that you ſaie it.

P. Then a turd for him that goeth to London.

M. Oh how proper a man were Peter, if he were waſhed and painted.

P. Nay after I am waſhed I am worth nothing.

A. How far haue we tourneyed Peter?

P. I neuer turne to looke backe, becauſe I would not be as Lots wife.

A. How far haue we from hence to the next towne?

P. A league and a turd.

M. The league we will goe, the other thou ſhalt paſſe.

A. That we may paſſe ouer this iourney without wearineſſe, tell vs a tale Peter.

P. For my part, I would tell money with a better will.

A. No

A. Not

A. No, si no algun acaeçído que te avíno por essos camínos.

A. Not so, but some chaunce that hath fallen out to thee on these waies.

P. Estonces contár les hé vno que me subçedío el viáje passádo haziendo este camíno con vn hidálgo.

P. Then I will tell you one which happened vnto me the last voyage I came this way with a gentleman.

M. No sea muy largo que me dormiré.

M. Let it not be too long, for I will sleepe.

P. Si se durmiére la mohína tendrá cuydádo de despertár le.

P. If you sleepe, the she mule will be carefull to wake you.

M. Vos le havéis levantádo mil falsos testimónios, mira quan bien camína y quan mansa va?

M. You have raised a thousand false testimonies against her, behold how wel she trauelleth, and how well she goeth.

P. * A el freír lo verá.

*P. * By the frying you shall see.*

A. Ea dexémos esso vaya el quento.

A. Well let vs leaue this, forward with the tale.

P. Pocos dias ha, yo víne este camíno con vno de los mayores habladóres que he conoçído en mi vida y como el hablár mucho, y el mentír son tan parientes, dezía las mas terribles mentíras que se pueden ymaginár, pues como el me preguntásse vn dia que me parecía de su buena conversáçión, yo le respondí que muy bien, peró que quando contásse algun quento, se alargasse y pasásse tanto, que dava que morimurar a quantos le oyan, el me díxo pues sea esta la manera quando llegueemos a las posádas, sienta se tu apar de mi, y si me viéres contár álgo que te parézca que voy fuera de camino, tira me de la halda, estonçes yo entenderé, y me deterné, con este con çierto llegamos aquella noche a vna venta, donde a caso avían llegado tanbien muchos cavalléros, y como se asentassen a çenár y mi ámo entre ellos, yo me púse a su lado conforme a el conciérto, y como es costumbre cada vno començó a contár las maravíllas que avía visto por el mundo, llegó la bez a el bueno de mi amo el qual dixo que avia estado en tierra de japón, y que entre otras cosas maravillosas que alli avia visto fue vna yglézia que tenía mil pies de largo, a este tiempo yo que le víde

P. A little while since, I came this way with one of the greatest babblers that I knew in my life, and as much prating and lying are neere of kinne, hee tolde the most horrible lies that could be imagined, afterward as he asked me one daie, what I thought of his good behauiour, I made him answere, that I thought well, but that when hee did tell any tale, hee passed the bounds so much, that he gaue occasion to as many as did heare him, to speake ill of him behinde his backe: he tolde me, seeing it is so, when we come to our Innes, sit thou next vnto me, and if thou shalt see me tell any thing that seemes vnto thee that I goe out of the way, pluck me by the skirt, then will I vnderstand and stay my selfe, with this agreement we came that night to a lodging on the high waie, whither by chaunce also many gentlemen were arriued, and as they sate them downe to supper, and my master among them, I set my selfe close by his side, according to our agreement, and as the manner is, euery one began to tell of the maruels which hee had seene in the world, the turne came to the good man my master, who saide that hee had beene in the lande of Iaptha, and among other maruellous things that there he had seene was a church, which was a thousand foote long:

* *A collier sold coales to a woman and putting downe his coales put vp her frying pan, the woman asking if they were good coales, he answered, A freyr lo verá, i. by the frying she should see.*

vide yr tan desmandádo y como estava a lerta tíro le rézio de la halda, el luego me entendió, y díxo; y vno en ancho: los cavalleros se começáron a mirár vnos a otros y a son-reýr se hásta que vno dellos díxo, vala me Dios señór, y para que servía essa yglézia tan larga y angosta, de mill pies de largo? y vno en ancho, el replicó agradezcan vuestras mercedes que me tiráron de la falda atiempo, que si no, yo les boto a Dios que yo la quadrára, fue estonçes tanta la risa de todos que a mi amo le convino aquella noche salir se de la venta, por que entre todos quedó por refrán quando alguno contáva algo que pareçía mentira ✻ Le dezia el terçero quadre la v. m. que harto larga está.

M. De vna cosa me espanto yo Pedro.
P. Qual es?
M. Como pudíste durár tan largo tiempo con tu competidor en la facultád.
A. ✻ Si, por que esse es tu enemígo el que es de tu ofiçio.
P. Es verdád que muchas vezes le quí se dexár por esso, y le lo dezía que no quería mas caminár con el, por que era tocádo de mi própria enfermedád y no me dexava hazér bása.
A. Y que respondió a ésso?
P. Luego me prometía con juraménto, que callaría tóda vna jornada para que yo habláse.
A. Y cumplía lo?
P. Tan ynposible le éra a el podér lo ✻ cumplír como a v. m. dejerír esse pelo de asno, que ha comido.
M. Compañero pagado os han vuestro travájo.
A. No teneis razon Pedro ansi yo os vea zarco a podér de núbes.
P. Antes ciegue, que mal véa.
A. ✻ Ansi yo os vea arçobíspo con mitra

* As at cards.

* i. Calling him asse by craft or the gudgeons, or fooleries to day you haue swallowed.

long: then I seeing him so far out of order, as I was readie prepared, pluckt him by the skirt, he presently vnderstood me, and said; and one foot in breadth: the gentlemen began to looke one vpon another, and to smile, vntill one of them saide, In the name of God sir, and for what vse serued this church so long & narrow, of a thousand foot in length, and but one in breadth? he replied, thanke him, that pulled me by the skirt of the garment so soone, which if he had not done, I vow to God, I had made it fower square: then was there such a laughter among all, that my master was faine that night to get him out of the Inne, for that among them all, it remained as a proverbe, when any one did tell any thing which did seeme a lie, the third man said vnto him, make it square, for it is long enough.

M. Of one thing I woonder Peter.
P. What is it?
M. How thou couldest endure so long time, with thy competitor in thine owne faculti e?
A. Yea, for he is thy enimie which is of thy owne profession.
P. It is true, for many times I would leaue him for this cause, and did tel him, that I would not trauell no more with him, because he was infected with my disease, and did not suffer me to take vp a tr cke.*
A. And what answere made he to this?
P. Foorthwith he promised me with an oth, that he woulde hold his peace all one iourney, that I might speake.
A. And did he performe it?
*P. It was as impossible for him to haue power to accomplish it, as for your worship to digest this * asses haire which you haue eaten.*
M. Companion, you are paid home for your labour.
A. You mistake Peter, I see you dimne sighted, by reason of cloudes.
P. Rather wish I you blinde, then that I see ill.
A. Nay rather that I may haue my sight

to

tra de ſiéte palmas.

P. Anſi yo le véa a el, Pápa higos de ſu múla.

A. ✻ Echo te vna pulla * con ſu pullonçillo que tu mugér te haga çiérvo y te llámen tódos cuquíllo.

P. ✻ Echo te vna pulla venida ſobre mar, que los dientes ſe te cáygan y no puedas meár.

M. Piquémos compañéro que ſe va haziendo tarde.

A. Que hora ſerá Pedro?

P. La de ayer a eſtas oras puntualménte.

A. Eſſo tanbien lo dixéra mi mula ſi ſupiéra hablár.

P. Soy yo Relóx, que me pregúnta que óra es?

A. ✻ A lo menos * badájo, que monta tanto.

P. Y ſi doy adonde daré?

A. En la cabeça de el puto de tu padre.

P. Mas çerca eſtá la ſuya y ſonará bien, pues eſta hueca.

M. Bien camina de andadúra vueſtra mula.

A. Y la vueſtra ha bien deportánte.

M. Si no la convirtiéſſe algunas vezes en tróte que pareçe a el de la madre.

A. Entrémos en eſta vénta a dár çevada y comér vn vocádo.

P. Vn bocádo no mas, mas piénſo yo comér de vn çiento.

M. No os ſabréis paſſár un día ſin comér Pedro?

P. ✻ Par dios nuéſtro amo, como díze el vizcaíno, trípas llévan a pies que no pies a trípas.

A. ✻ Yo tambien digo que pan y víno ánden camino que no moço garrído.

P. Paz ſea en éſta caſa quien eſtá acá huéſpeda?

V. Quien eſtá alla quien lláma?

P. Ay poſáda ſeñora?

V. Si ſeñór, éntren y ſéan muy bien venídos que todo recádo ay.

P. Que

*to ſee you an Archbiſhop with * a miter of ſeuen hand bredths high.*

P. Nay not ſo, but that I might alſo ſee you eat the ſhittings of your mule.

A. I caſt thee a bone, with his yong one to gnawe vpon, thy wife makes thee a hart, and they call thee cuckolde euery one.

P. I caſt the bone to gnaw vpon at ſea, thy teeth fall out, and thy water hold in.

M. Let vs ſpurre on companion, for it waxeth late.

A. What is it a clocke Peter?

P. Iuſt the ſame, as it was yeſterday at this time.

A. This could my mule tell me, if ſhe could ſpeake?

P. Am I a clocke, that you aske me what it is a clocke?

A. At leaſt thou art a clapper, which is all one.

P. And if I do ſtrike where ſhall I hit?

A. Vpon the head of the buggerer thy father.

P. Your head is neere vnto me, and it will ſound well ſeeing it is hollow.

M. Your mule doth go a ſwift eaſie paſe.

A. And yours ambles well.

M. If ſhe did not change it, ſometimes into a trot, which ſeemes like the trot of hir dam.

A. Let vs go in into this Inne, to baite and eate a bitte.

P. What one bit and no more, I thinke to eate more then a hundred.

M. Can you not paſſe one daie Peter without eating?

*P. By God our maſter as the * Biskaine ſaith, the bellie carrieth the feete and not the feete the bellie.*

*A. I alſo ſay, * that bread and wine are trauellers, and not the luſtie frolike youth.*

P. Peace be in this houſe, who is heere hoſteſſe?

H. Who is there, who cals?

P. Haue you lodging miſtris?

H. Yes Sir, come in, and be very well welcome, for all good entertainment is here to be had.

P. What

* i Caróça, *which is a high hat of paper ſet on the head of a bawde, riding on an aſſe throw the ſtreetes for a puniſhment.*

* Pulla *a ſlout.*

* Badájo, *a clapper of a bell by a metaphor a ioultihead.*

* *A Biskaine trauelling a foote fainte for want of foode, filled his belly, afterward went luſtely, & ſaid, the belly carrieth the feete, & not the feete the bellie.*

* *The luſtie youth without eating or drinking muſt needs faint, and giue him that, although he be faint he goeth forward.*

P. Que aurá que comér?
V. Ay conéjos ay perdíçes, ay pollos, ay gallinas, ay ganços, ay ánades, ay carnero, ay vaca, ay cabrito, ay menudo de puerco.
P. Bien dixe yo que en su casa de v.m. no podía faltár puerco.
V. Ni en la suya faltará vellaco, mientras el estuviére dentro.
P. No en verdád señora, si no que me dixéron que los dias passádos avía v.m. reñido bravaménte con la limpieça.
V. Tambien me dixéron a mi que avía el desterrádo la Verguença de su casa.
M. Huelgo me Pedro que as topado con lo que avías menestér.
P. Y aun ella me ha menestér a mi.
V. ✠ Yo por çierto, si no es para poner le en peralvillo con doze y la maestra, no se para que?
P. Aora Señóra no nos digámos mas calláte, y callémos que sendas nos tenemos.
V. Ea acábe hablador de Ventája, pida lo que ha menestér.
P. Deme héno, y paja, y çebáda, para las mulas.
V. Quanto quiere?
P. Dos harneros de héno y un zelemín de çebáda.
V. Muy poco es para tres véstias.
P. Aquí no ay mas que dos qual es la ótra?
V. La otra soys vos y mas tragóna que estotras dos.
P. Si soy mas, no de paxa ni çebada porque es muy dúra de digestión.
V. Mas duro es vn garróte y suele ablandár las costíllas a vn velláco.
M. Bien está no passe mas adelante señora Huéspeda quanto pónen de aquí a la çiudád?
V. Señor çinco leguas.
M. Podrémos los caminár de a qui a la noche?
V. Como picáren?

M. Ay

P. *What shall we haue to dinner?*
H. *There are conies, there are partridges, there are chickens, hennes, geese, ducks, there is mutton, there is beefe, kid, and hogs inwards.*
P. *Well saide I, that in your house there could not want hogs flesh.*
H. *Nor in your house shall there want a knaue while you are within.*
P. *No in truth mistris, but they told me that a while agoe you and cleanlines had been at bate.*
H. *And they told me, that you had banished shamefastnes from your house.*
M. *I am glad Peter that thou hast mette with that thou haddest need of.*
A. *And also she hath need of me.*
H. *I haue neede of him truly, if it be but to put him in * Peralvillo to shoote twelue arrowes at him with the * mistris, I know not for what els?*
P. *Now mistris, let vs saie no more, holde your peace and let vs be still, for we haue a quip a peece.*
H. *Go to, make an end babbler in graine, & demand that you haue need of.*
P. *Giue me haie, and straw, and prouender for the mules.*
H. *How much will you haue?*
P. *Two sieues full of haie, and a pecke of barley.*
H. *It is very little for three beastes.*
P. *Heere are no more then two, which is the other?*
H. *The other are you, and more deuouring then the other two.*
P. *If I be more, it is not of straw nor barley, for it is very hard of digestion.*
H. *Harder is a cudgell, and yet it vseth to soften the ribs of a knaue.*
M. *It is well, passe no further forward mistresse hostesse, how far doe they count it from hence to the citie?*
H. *Sir fiue leagues.*
M. *May we ride them betwixt this and night?*
H. *As you shal hasten.*

M. *Is*

* Peralvillo, a mount in Spaine where they shoote malefactors to death.
* i. That arrow which hitteth on the hart.

M. Ay algun río en el camíno o algun mal passo?

V. Por do quiera, ay vna legua de mal camíno.

M. Ay adonde herrár?

V. El camino no señór, las mulas si señor, vuéstras merçédes mil partes ay donde pueden herrár.

M. ✻ Si son los yerros por amores, dignos son de perdonár.

A. Señora huéspeda cuya es ésta venta?

V. De vn cavallero de la çiudád.

A. Quanto págan por ella de arrendamiento en vn año?

V. Mas que ella vale, quinientos ducados.

M. De essa suerte, buena maña se an menestér dar a hurtár para sacár la costa.

P. Essa no fálta, el gáto por liebre, la carne de mula por váca, el víno passádo por água todo va de ésta manera.

V. ✻ Mala pasqua de Dios a el vellaco y mal san Iuán. quando ha visto el, esso en mi venta?

P. Visto lo no, gustádo lo si.

V. Vos mentís como velláco, que nunca tal.

P. ✻ Aora estémos a quenta huéspeda no demos de comér a el Diablo, venga acá no se acuerda el otro día quando yo vine por aquí con un cavallero, que le pidió le diesse un pedáço de carne de aquéllo que le avía dádo otro dia antes quando avía passádo por aquí, porque dezía que le avía savido muy bien, lo qual oyendo aquel niño chiquíto, díxo caro nos costaría, si cada dia se nos avía de morír un Roçín.

V. Es Verdád que aquello fue aquel Roçín que se nos murió, peró estáva tan górdo y tan lindo que éra mejór que carne de váca.

M. Señóra huéspeda aunque mas líndo sea, no nos dee de el agóra.

V. No Señór que ya se acabó, hasta aora avia de durár?

M. Vea-

M. *Is there any riuer in the way, or any euill passage?*

H. *Which way soeuer you goe, there is a league of euill waie.*

M. *Is there any place* * herrár?

H. *The way, no Sir, the mules, yes Sir, a thousand passages where you may erre.*

* *To misse or erre. Also to shoue a horse or mule.*

M. *If they be errors for loue, they are worthie to be pardoned.*

A. *Mistresse hostesse, whose is this inne?*

H. *A gentlemans of the citie.*

A. *How much doe you pay for the hire of it by the yeere?*

H. *More then it is woorth, fiue hundred ducats.*

M. *By this meanes they had neede good skill to steale to get out their charge.*

P. *That skill wants not, a cat for hare flesh, the flesh of a mule for beefe, wine mixed with water, all goes in this manner.*

H. *God send the knaue an ill Easter, and an ill Midsommer, when haue you seene this in my Inne?*

P. *I haue not seene, but I haue tasted it?*

H. *You lie like a knaue, there was neuer any such matter.*

P. *Hostesse we are vpon the reckoning now,* * *let vs not giue the dinell his dinner, come hither, doe you not remember the other daie, when I came this way with a gentleman which requested you to giue him a peece of meate, of that you had giuen him the other day before, when he passed this waie, bicause he said it liked his taste very well, the which the little childe hearing, saide, it would be deare flesh vnto vs, if euery day there shoulde die a nagge.*

* *Let vs not braule and fall out, and so go to law vpon words and so make the dinell dine.*

H. *It is true, that there was a nagge which died, but hee was so fat and so faire, that hee was better then beefe.*

M. *Mistres hostesse, although he might be more fine, giue vs not of that noue.*

H. *No sir, for he is already made an end of, what think you it could last til now?*

M. *Let*

M. Veámos el víno que tal es.

V. El vino es tal, que básta a llevár al cielo a el, que acoſtumbráre a bevérlo.

P. Ola nueſtra áma no baſta ventéra ſi no eréje?

V. Lo que yo dígo es verdád y lo provaré que el buen víno, lleva los hombres a el çielo.

M. De que manera?

V. El buen vino cría buena ſangre, la buena ſangre engéndra buena condición, la buena condición pára buenas óbras, las buenas obras, llévan a los hombres a el cielo.

M. Ella ha aprovado ſu yntención baſtantemente.

A. Peró no ſe podrá dezír eſſo por éſte víno.

V. Por que?

A. ✻ Por que eſto mas paréçe vinágre y água.

V. Agua, no por vida de mi ánima, que tiene mas de la, que le echo el de lo alto.

M. Pues Dios no le vino a echár água, que ſin agua lo crió.

P. Bien, no eſtá v.m. en el quénto, el de lo alto es ſu marído, que eſtá en lo alto de la caſa, y deſde allí, écha água en el vino, por una cebratána.

A. Con vos me entiérren Pedro que ſabéys de quenta.

M. Yo entendía que llamáva a Dios, el de lo alto.

A. En todas las coſas ay engáño.

P. Si no es en la ropa vieja.

V. Por ciérto que tienen razón, que eſtá ya el mundo muy perdído, por eſſo nos hémos recogído mi marído y yo a éſta vénta, por acabár en buena vida.

M. Eſta llamáys buena vida huéſpeda?

P. Si Señór, que peor éra la de los de Sodóma y Gomórra.

V. No le paréçe a v.m. que es buena vida eſtár hechos hermitaños en eſte disyerto, que mas hiziéron los padres de el yermo?

P. Y

M. *Let vs ſee the wine that is ſo good.*

H. *The wine is ſuch, that it is ſufficient to bring a man to heauen that ſhall vſe to drinke it.*

P. *What now Miſtreſſe, is it not ynough to be a keeper of an Inne, except you be an heretike too?*

H. *That which I ſay is true, and I will proone it, that good wine carrieth men vp to heauen.*

M. *How ſo?*

H. *Good wine makes good blood, good blood doth engender good condition, good condition doth ende in good works, good works carrie men to heauen.*

M. *She hath prooued her intent very ſufficiently.*

A. *But this cannot bee verified in this wine.*

H. *Why?*

A. *Becauſe this ſeemes rather vineger and water.*

H. *Water, by the life of my ſoule, it hath no more water in it, then he from aboue put in it.*

M. *God neuer came to put water into wine, but without water he created it.*

P. *Well, you vnderſtand not the matter a right. He from aboue is hir huſband, which is in the top of the houſe, and from thence puts water into the wine with a long tunnell.*

A. *I will die and line with thee Peter, for thou knoweſt faſhions.*

M. *I vnderſtoode that ſhe had called God, him that was from aboue.*

A. *In euery thing there is deceit.*

P. *Except it be in an old garment.*

H. *Truely they haue reaſon, for the worlde is very badde, for this cauſe haue my husbande and I withdrawen our ſelues into this Inne to make an end in good life.*

M. *Call you this a good life hoſteſſe?*

P. *Yea ſir, for that of Sodom and Gomorra was woorſe.*

H. *Do you not thinke that it is a good life to be made Hermites in this deſart, what did the fathers in the wildernes more then this?*

P. *And*

P. Y tan virtuósos, que de limósna, a quantos paſſan les quitan lo que llévan.

P. And ſo holie that of pure almes, of, as many as paſſe they take away that they carie.

V. Quitár, nunca Dios tal quiera, reçebír lo que nos dan con cortesía, eſſo ſi.

H. Take away, God forbid, receiue that they giue vs with curteſie that we doe.

P. Es el cáſo, que llaman cortesía a la gançúa, con que ábren las viçáças.

P. Thus it is, they call the picklocke curteſie, with which they open the mailes.

V. El diablo trúxo a éſte moço a mi caſa, vete con todos los diáblos, eſpíritu de contradición.

M. The diuell brought this ſeruant to my houſe, get thee hence in the diuels name, thou ſpirit of contradiction.

P. ✻ Mal me quieren mis comádres, por que les dígo las verdádes.

P. My goſſips cannot abide me, becauſe I ſpeake truth vnto them truely.

M. Aóra Pedro, haze quenta con la huéſpeda, y vamos de aquí, que es tarde.

M. Now Peter reckon with the hoſteſſe and let vs begon hence, for it is late.

P. Que ſe deve de todo huéſpeda?

P. Hoſteſſe what is owing in the whole?

V. Eſpéreſe, contaré, dos de paja, y de paja dos, tres de çebada, çinco de víno, vno de carne y dos de toçíno, veynte reales entodo.

H. Tarie I little, I will reckon, two of ſtraw, and of ſtraw two, three of barley, fiue of wine, one of fleſh, and two of bacon, ten ſhillings in the whole.

P. ✻ Quénta hecha, mula muerta, eſcudéro yos a pie, pues a mi me quiére dar papilla ſeñóra huéſpeda, ✻ no ſave, que quando élla naçió, ya yo comía pan con cortéça: eſpere haré yo la mia.

P. The reckoning made, the mule dead, ſeruingman get your way a foote why the miſtreſſe hoſteſſe will giue me pap, doth ſhe not knowe, that when ſhe was borne, then did I eat bread with hard cruſt, tarrie ile make my reckoning.

V. Haze, veámos.

H. Make it, let vs ſee.

P. ✻ Tres y dos ſon çinco, dos de blanco y tres de tinto, y otros tres de eſtópas y pez, vno de la ólla y dos de la chólla, y médio de la çebólla, ocho ſon en todos.

*P. Three and two are fiue, two of ſacke & three of wine ſomewhat blacke, and other three of the hurdes of flaxe and pitch, one of the pot, and two of the *nowle, and a halfe of the chibbowle, they are eight in the whole.*

* The hinder part of the head

V. Malos años para vos, págame aquí, ſi no, por el ſiglo de mi padre que os arañe élla cára.

H. What with a miſchiefe to you, paie mee heere; if not, by my fathers ſoule ile put out thine eies.

P. ✻ Quitádo ſe ha el gáto la rópa de la ypocrasía, ſeñóra hermitáña, tenga paciénçia y no tanta codícia.

*P. The cat hath caſt off the *garment of hypocriſie, miſtris Hermite haue patience, and be not ſo coueto us.*

* The cat faining hir ſelfe a Hermite, put on a Hermits weed and many beaſts and creatures came to hir for ghoſtly counſell, at laſt came the mice, which when ſhe ſpied, flong off the garment and to them.

V. ✻ No me quente mortuórios, ſi no pagué me, ſi no, las bárbas le ſacaré vna a vna.

H. Do not reckon vp mortuaries vnto me, but paie me, if not I will pull off the haires of thy beard one by one.

M. Da le, lo que pidiére, la huéſpeda Pedro no riñas con ella.

M. Giue that which the Hoſteſſe doth require Peter & braul not with hir.

P. En vna náo cargáda de plata, no ay hárto para contentárla.

P. In a ſhip loaden with ſiluer there is not enough to content hir.

V. No pído ſi no lo juſto, paga me hermáno

H. I require nothing but my right, pay me

mánoy déxate de palabras.

brother and leaue of words.

* *All in one song.*

P. Anſi dize la picáza, tome ſeñóra ve ay dóze reáles, los ſeis ſon de buéno, y los ſeis de mal provécho le hágan.

P. *So ſaith the * chattering Pie, holde miſtres, ſee heere ſixe ſhillings, three of them be much good doe it you with them, and the other three the diuell choake you with them.*

V. Mas no, ſi no los ſeis, ſon de bien venídos ſéan, y los ſeys de en óra mala váys.

H. *Not ſo, but the one three are of welcome vnto me, and the other three the diuell go with thee.*

P. ✻ Maldiciónes de putas viéjas, oraçiónes ſon de ſalúd.

P. *Curſinges of old whoores are praiers of health.*

M. Quéde ſe con Dios Señóra huéſpeda.

M. *God be with you miſtres Hoſteſſe.*

V. El váya con vueſtras merçédes, aqui eſtá eſta pobre poſáda para todas las vezes que viniéren eſte camíno, les ſúplico ſe ſirvan délla.

H. *God conduct your worſhips, heere is this poore Inne, for as often as you ſhall come this way, I entreate you to vſe it at your command.*

* *i. Their money.*

P. ✻ Sobre buen haz de pája tía.

P. ** Aunt you do it vpon a good ſheafe of ſtrawe.*

V. No, ſino por ſus ojos bellídos lo harán.

H. *No, but onely for your faire lookes ſir.*

P. Quede con dios tía, y el la hága buena hermitáña.

P. *Aunt God be with you, and make you a good hermite.*

V. Anda con dios híjo, y el os hága mejór de lo que ſoys.

H. *Farewell ſonne, and God make thee better then that thou art.*

Diálogo quinto, entre tres Pájes, llamados *el uno Iuan, el otro Franciſco, el* otro Guzman, en el qual ſe contienen, *las ordinárias pláticas que los pájes ſuelen tenér unos con otros.*

The fift Dialogue betweene three Pages, called the one of them Iohn, the other *Frances, the other Guzman, wherein are* conteined the ordinarie ſpeeches which pages are wont to haue one with the other.

I. DE donde viénes Franciſco?

I. *FRom whence come you Frances?*

F. De la corte Iuan.

F. *From the court Iohn.*

I. Que ay por allá de nuevo?

I. *What is the newes there?*

F. El rollo ſe eſtá adonde ſolía, el Rey ha mandádo que quien tuviére que comér, que cóme, y el otro que ayúne.

F. *The gallowes is where it was wont to be, the king hath commanded that hee that hath any thing to dinner, that he eate it, and he that hath not that he faſt.*

I. Viſte a la Réyna?

I. *Haue you ſeene the Queene?*

F. A la de diamantes con que híze el poſtrer flux.

F. *The Queene of Diamonds with which I made the laſt fluſh.*

I. Luego jugado has?

I. *Haſt thou now beene at gaming?*

F. Yo no, mis dineros jugáron al trocádo, y trocáron me por otro dueño.

F. *Not I, my money plaied at exchange, and changed me for another maſter.*

I. Ganáſte o perdíſte?

I. *Haſt thou won or loſt?*

F. Gané

F. *I*

F. Gané y perdí.
I. Como púdo sér?
F. Perdí mis dinéros, y gané escarmiénto para no jugár mas.
I. No sería pérdida la del dinero, si tu llevasses adelante esse propósito, peró yo dígo, que quien hízo, hará.
F. A lo menos mientras me durare el Escozór, no jugaré mas.
I. Esse no te durare mas que hasta llegár de aquí a tu casa, o hasta que tengas mas dinéros.
F. Pues yo para que quiero el dinero, tengo de comprár casas, o viñas con ello.
I. Para embiár a tus pariéntes, o para luzírte con ello.
F. Luzírme o que? malos años, Lúzgame el puto de mi ámo pues se sirve de mi.
I. Pues piensas que te ha de durár tu ámo toda la vída?
F. Dure lo que duráre, como cuchár de pan, que quando éste me falte, no faltará ótro tan ruyn como el.
I. Y quando séas grande?
F. Estonces ya sabémos el paradéro de los pajes, o ala guérra, o a un monastério, o a la hórca.
I. Esso postrero lo le renuncio en ti.
F. Pues pensáis vos esca páros por ypócrita?
I. Hermáno, en mi linája nunca úvo ningun ahorcádo, no quiero estrenárlo yo.
F. Estrenada os darán la soga, no os penseys por esso.
I. Piensa el ladrón que todós son de su condición, yo hermano no piénso hazér obras por donde la merésca.
F. Pues no as oýdo dezír, que el pensár no es sabér, esso sin pensár se verná antes que vn colongía.
I. Yo bien c réo, que si yo trato mucho contígo, que tu me procurerás pegár la tiña, porque vn puerco

F. *I haue woon and I haue lost.*
I. *How could that be?*
F. *I lost my money, and got a warning to play no more.*
I. *The losse of money should be no losse, if thou didst go forward in this purpose, but I say, that he that hath once plaied will play againe.*
F. *At the least, while the smarting shall last I will play no more.*
I. *That will not last with thee longer, then till thou commest home, or vntill thou hast more money.*
F. *What should I doe with money, am I to buy houses or vinyards with it?*
I. *To send it to thy friends and kinred, or to make thy selfe trim with it.*
F. *To make my selfe trim? a plague take it, let the buggerer my master trim me seeing he serues himselfe of me.*
I. *Why thinkest thou thy master is to liue with thee for euer?*
F. *Let him last as long as a spoone of bread, when he is wanting to me, there will not faile another as bad as hee.*
I. *And when thou art better growen in yeeres?*
F. *Then we know the end of Pages, either to the warre, or to a monasterie, or to the gallowes.*
I. *This last I leaue to thee.*
F. *Why thinke you to scape because you are an Hypocrite?*
I. *Brother, in my kinred neuer was there any hanged, I will not hansell the gallowes.*
F. *They will giue you a halter for hansell, take you no care for that.*
I. *Well thinkes the theefe, that all are as himselfe, I brother do not thinke to doe any thing that I may deserue the gallowes.*
F. *But hast thou not heard saie, that opinion is no knowledge, this without thinking will come sooner then a canonship.*
I. *I well beleeue, that if I deale much with thee, thou wilt infect me with mangines, for one hog that hath*

puerco encenagádo, ſiempre procúra encenagár a otro.

F. Dizes verdád, que ſi el ladrón anda con el hermitáño, o el ladrón ſerá hermitáño, o el hermitáño ladrón, peró tu nunca juegas?

I. Yo no en mi vída.

F. Pues tente bien no cáygas, porque a fee que ſi cáes, que as de ſer como los borráchos que comiençan tarde a ſer lo, que por eſquitárſe de lo que han dexádo de bevér, nunca ſalen de cueros.

I. Si Dios me guarde mi júyzio, yo me guardaré deſſe vício.

F. Mas fuerte éra Tróya, y fue deſtruyda.

I. Dexémos éſſo agóra, y díme como te va con tu ámo?

F. A mi muy bien, porque como es moço, galán, y enamorádo, ſon tres coſas que ſácan de harón al mas cuerdo, y anſi todo ſe nos va en fieſtas, vna librea oy, otra mañána, ſiempre en ſaraes, múſicas, y dánças, ſiempre en combites, que mal año para Lançarote quando de Bretaña víno, ſi éra tan bien tratádo como noſotros.

I. Si peró a fée que créo, que tras buen bocádo, dais buen grito.

F. Porque dízes éſſo?

I. Porque me parece que ſi vueſtro ámo dánça de la manera, voſotros no avéys d'eſtár ocioſos, ſino que avéys de çapateár, porque en caſa del múſico, todos los criádos ſon dançántes.

F. Es verdád que eſſo a coſadillos, nos trae de dia con recaudos, y de noche con rondas, peró con el buen peſebre, todo ſe paſſa y no como tu que eſtás ſerviéndo a vn pelón, que te deve matár de hambre.

I. No mata, porque yo nunca túve vida, deſpues que eſtoy con el.

F. No tiéne buen ordinário?

I. La

wallowed in the mire will beray another.

F. *Thou ſayeſt true, for if a theefe keepe companie with a hermit, either a theefe ſhall become a hermit, or a hermit a theefe, but doſt thou neuer play?*

I. *I, neuer in my life.*

F. *Then hold faſt, fall not, for in faith if thou falleſt, thou art like to be as drunken men, which beginne at length ſo to be, which to quit themſelues of that they haue left to drinke, they neuer get out of drunkennes.*

I. *If God keepe me in my right minde, I wil keepe my ſelfe from this vice.*

F. *Troy was more ſtrong, and yet was ouercome.*

I. *Let vs leaue this now, and tell me how your maſter and you agree?*

F. *I like very well of him, for he is yoong, gallant, and in loue, they are three things which buſie the wiſeſt man, & ſo we are altogither in feaſtings, one liuery to day, another to morrow, neuer without good cheere, muſicke, daunces, and banquets, that the diuell take* Lançarote *when he came from Brittaine if he were ſo well entreated as we are.*

I. *Yea, but in faith I beleeue that after a good morſell, you paie well for it.*

F. *Why ſaieſt thou ſo?*

I. *For I thinke, that if your maſter daunce in ſuch ſort, you are not altogether idle, but that you foote it too, for in a muſitions houſe all the ſeruants are dauncers.*

F. *It is true, that by reaſon of this loue ſmall occaſions driue vs in the day time with letters, and in the night we round the ſtreet, but with good fare we paſſe ouer all this, and not as thou doſt which ſerueſt a miſerable wretch, which killeth thee with hunger.*

I. *He kils me not, for I neuer had life ſince I came to him.*

F. *Hath he not a good ordinarie table?*

I. *Wretched-*

I. La lazéria es ordinaria en cása.

F. Que os da a comér?

I. Esperanças y folías.

F. Con ésso estás tan gordo?

I. De los Tovillos si estoy.

F. Dalle cantonáda.

I. Temo de encontrár otro peór, y no querría por huýr de la llama dár en las brásas.

F. Haz te cuchillo de melonéro, provár muchos hasta hallár uno buéno.

I. Luégo cobra hombre mala fama, y le ✻ dízen Piédra movedíza no la cobre móho, y todo el mundo le da del cobdo.

F. No sino dexáos secár como palo en sarmentéra.

I. Adonde vas tu agóra?

F. A buscár mi ámo, y témo que no le tengo de poder hallár.

I. Adonde le perdiste?

F. Yo no le perdí, el se perdió muchas dias ha.

I. Ansi yrá un perdído a buscár otro perdído, como un duelo busca otro duelo, y una necedád a otra, porque *Pares cum paribus facillimè congregantur.*

F. Bendito sea Dios, que por tres blancas de gramática que studió, ya no se cabe en el cuérpo, y no vée la ora que desembuchár lo.

I. Dígo hermano que cada obéja con su paréja, y vn semijante busca a otro.

F. Ansi tu ámo como es miseráble pelón, busca vn pócrita como tu, a quien con dezílle que es menestér ayunár para yr al cielo, te tiene en diéta perpétua, y canoníza por virtúd, lo que es miséria fina.

I. No tienes razón, que el no es avariénto, peró como dízen Pobréza no es viléza.

F. No, mas es maestra que enseña como se ha de hazér.

I. Yo se, que si mi ámo tuviére la rénta del

I. *Wretchednesse it selfe is his ordinarie prouision in house.*

F. *What diet doth he giue you?*

I. *Hopes and songs.*

F. *And with this art thou so fat?*

I. *If I be fat, it is in my ankle bones.*

F. *Run away from him.*

I. *I am afraid to meete with a woorse, and I would not leape out of the frying pan, and fall into the fire.*

F. *Make of thy selfe a knife to cut pumpions, proone many vntill you finde one good.*

I. *Straightway a man gets an ill name, and they say a rolling stone gathereth no mosse, and euery one insulteth him a side.*

F. *No but suffer your selfe to drie as stickes on a pile or heape.*

I. *Whither goest thou now?*

F. *To seeke my master, and I feare that I shall not finde him.*

I. *Where didst thou lose him?*

F. *I lost him not, he lost himselfe a great while agoe.*

I. *So one that is lost himselfe, goeth to seeke another that is lost, as one greefe seekes another greefe, and one folly another: for like will to like.*

F. *God be blessed, that for* * *three blanckes of Grammar which he hath studied, now he cannot keepe it in his belly, and he thinkes euerie hower ten, till he hath vttered his whole minde.*

* *A blancke halfe a* Maravedi, *a* Maravedi 34. *of them to fixe pence.*

I. *I say brother, euerie sheepe with his equall, and like will to like.*

F. *So thy master as he is a miserable wretch seeks out an hypocrite like thy selfe, and by telling thee how requisite it is to fast for the winning of heauen doth holde thee in continuall diet, and extols that for a vertue, which is pure miserablenes.*

I. *You saie not well, for he is not couetous, but as it is saide, Pouertie is not vilenes.*

F. *No, but it is a mistris which doth teach vs how we should become nigardly.*

I. *I know, if my master had reuenues as thy*

del tuyo que gastára mas que el, lo qual el nos díze que hará muy complidaménte si dios le mejóra d'estádo.

master hath, that hee would spend more then he doth, which hee telleth vs he will performe with the best, if it please God to better his estate.

F. De manéra que éstas son las esperánças que coméis.

F. So then these bee the hopes which you feede on.

I. Mas vale que agua, como dezía la véja que mojáva el sarmiénto en el río y le chupáva.

I. It is better then water, as the olde woman saide, which dipped a dry sticke in the riuer and sucked it.

F. Con ésta comída no dubdo dexéis de salír buénos girifaltes al cabo del año.

*F. With this diet I doubt not but at the yeeres end you may proone good * Gerfalcons to flie.*

* i. With this diet you may be light enough to flie.

I. Si peró, si bolamos tan alto, llevárnos ha el viento, como haze a todos los que se susténtan de semejánte manjár.

I. Yea but if we flie so high, the winde will carie vs away, as it doth all those which do feede on such diet.

F. Por vida de tu madre, que renta tiéne tu ámo?

F. By the life of thy mother, what reuenewe hath thy master?

I. Yo te lo diré vn quento de mentíras, y otro de necessidádes, y vn millón de necedádes, y todo ésto se gasta cada año, de suerte, que viene a salír a rata por cantidád.

I. I will tell thee, a thousand thousandes of lies, and another of needs, a million of fooleries, and all this is spent euery yeere in such sort, that hee spends as much as comes in to him.

F. Quantos cavállos tiene?

F. How many horses hath he?

I. Díze que cinco con quatro que se le an muerto.

I. He saith fiue, with those fower which are dead.

F. Quantos críados?

F. How many seruants?

I. Nónes son, y no llégan a tres.

I. They are odde, and yet they mount not to three.

F. De suerte que tu solo le sirves.

F. So then thou alone seruest him.

I. Y aun me podrían açotár por vagamúndo.

*I. * And yet might they whip me for a vagabond.*

* i. In going vp and downe shifting for my self, and not liuing on my master.

F. Pues como siendo solo, no tiénes mucho en que entendér.

F. How so, seeing thou art alone thou hast not much to imploy thy selfe on.

I. Si tengo, en contár lástimas y calamidádes.

I. But I haue much to do to reckon greefes and calamities.

F. Quando tiempo ha que bives con el?

F. How long hast thou liued with him?

* i. of hunger. I. Que muéro con el muchos dias ha.

*I. I haue been * dying with him long since.*

F. Hermáno hermáno, quien si mude Dios le ayude.

F. Brother, brother, God wil him helpe, that seekes for it himselfe.

I. Si, mas adonde yrá el buey que no áre, por donde quiera veo cien leguas de mal camino.

I. Yea, but where shall the oxe goe that he shall not labour, which way soeuer I see a hundred leagues of ill way.

F. Aquí viene Guzmanillo, veámos que nuevas trae, a Guzman que ay de nuevo?

F. Heere comes little Guzman, let vs see what newes hee brings. Hoe Guzman what newes?

G. Muchas cosas, el Turco (dizen que) se ha tornado Moro, que Venecia nada en agua, y que Ytália está llena de hombres, que en Fráncia

*G. Many things, the Turke (as they say) is become a Moore or infidell, * Venice swims in water, & Italie is full of people, and that in France there*

* i. Stands built vpon the sea, the sea compassing it round about.

cia ay mas de cien mil hombres de guerra, y tambien ſe dize de ſecreto que el conde de Flandes a dormido con la Reyna de Eſpaña.

*there are more then a hundred thouſand men of armes, and alſo they ſay in ſecret, that the * Earle of Flaunders hath lien with the Queene of Spaine.*

* *The king of Spaine in his title Earle of Flaunders.*

F. Todo eſſo ay de nuevo?

F. Is there all this newes?

G. Aora vinieron con eſte correo eſtas nuevas.

G. Theſe newes came now with this poſte.

F. De luengas vias luengas mentiras ſuelen venir.

F. Farre fetched lies come from farre.

G. Lo que yo os he dicho, todo es tan verdad, como ſer aora de dia.

G. That which I haue told you is as true as it is now day light.

F. Luego grandes guerras ſe aparejan eſte verano.

F. Then great warres are like to bee this ſommer.

G. Los pronoſticos dizen, que ſte verano los que biviéren, verán grandes maravillas.

G. The Prognoſtications ſay, thoſe that ſhall liue this ſommer ſhall ſee great woonders.

F. Que maravillas ſerán, cuenta nos las.

F. What ſhall thoſe woonders be, I pray thee tell them vs.

G. Dizen que el ſol ſerá mayor que toda la tierra.

G. They ſay the ſun ſhall be bigger then all the earth.

F. Santo Dios, y eſſo ha de ſer verdad?

F. Bleſſed God, and will this prooue true?

G. Y que la luna cada noche aparece de ſu manera, que las eſtrellas ſino fueſſe por el ſol no ternán reſplandor ningúno, que los rios corren a la mar, que arderán muchos montes, que avrá grande mortandad de todo genero de ganados, y en todas las ciudadas avrá unos monſtruos que echarán llamas por la boca, y los hombres que no comieron lo que eſtos vomitáren, morirán.

*G. And that the moone euery night doth appeere after hir old faſhion, that the * ſtarres if it were not for the ſunne, ſhould haue no light, that all riuers run into the ſea, that manie * mountains ſhall burne, that there ſhall be a great ſlaughter of al kind of * cattell, and in all cities there ſhall be monſters which ſhall caſt * out fire at the mouth, and thoſe men which ſhal not eat that which theſe monſters ſhall vomite, they die.*

* *i. Starres receiue their light of the ſunne.*

* *As mount AEtna in Sicilie and others which continually caſt out fire and brimſtone, &c.*

* *For mans meate to eate.*

* *i. Ouens wherin they bake breade.*

F. Vala me Dios, yo pienſo que todo eſſo es mentira.

F. God helpe me, I thinke al this to be a lie.

G. Los Pronoſticos dizen, que el ſol y la luna faltarán, antes que todas eſſas coſas falten.

G. The Prognoſtications ſay that the ſun and the moone ſhall faile of their courſes rather then theſe thinges to faile.

F. Deſſa manera, todos los hombres morirán, porque quien ha de comer lo que vomitáren los monſtruos?

F. By this meanes, all men ſhall die, for who can eat that which theſe monſters ſhall vomit?

* *Made a gull.*

* *Hoe, a voice that carters vſe to make their horſes ſtand ſtill.*

G. Pues as tu comido vn aſno entéro, y no comerás de aquello?

*G. Why haſt thou ſwallowed downe an * aſſe whole, and wilt not eat of it?*

F. Si yo ſoy aſno, vos ſoys mula.

F. If I be an aſſe thou art a mule.

G. Xo que te eſtriego que largas le naciéron a v.m.

*G. * Ho I do rub thee, for they are ſprung vp verie * long to your worſhip.*

* *i. Long eares, calling him thereby aſſe.*

* *Calling of him by this a Iewe, which for the moſt part haue long noſes.*

F. Tan largas como ſus narizes.

F. So long as your noſe.

G. Va a ver a tu tia Hermano?

G. Go you to ſee your aunt brother?

F. No que ya vi a tu madre, en la pellejeria.

F. Not ſo, for I ſaw thy mother in a brothel houſe.

lejería. *houſe.*

* Ha & Rallame, *then it is Grate me, and* Harra allá *then it is haight that way as one ſaieth to an aſſe.*

G. *Harrallame eſſe quéſo. *Grate me this cheeſe.*

F. Harralláme eſſe aſno. *Haight that way this aſſe.*

G. Toda la vida has de comér ſin pláto? *What art thou to eate thy meate all thy life without a platter?*

F. Toda la vída has de comér tu cabrón? *Art thou to eate all thy life of goates fleſh?*

G. O Dios te bendíga la bella alimaña. *O God bleſſe thee faire beaſt.*

F. O Dios te deſpache déſte mundo para el otro. *O God rid thee out of this world into the other.*

G. Dízen me que es v.m.gran comedór de huévos aſſados. *They tell me that you are a great eater of hard egges.*

F. Tambien me han dícho a mi que v. m.come muy bien bacalão. *Alſo they tell mee that you eate verie well poore Iohn.*

G. O ſi todos los áſnos truxéran albárdas, que buen oficio era el, de los albarderos. *O if all aſſes ſhould cærrie pack-ſaddles, what a good trade ſhould the pack-ſadler haue.*

F. Si eſſo fuere anſi, vna mas tenía de coſta vueſtro ámo cada mes. *If it were ſo, your maſter ſhoulde bee at the charge of one packe-ſaddle more euery moneth.*

G. Si del nécio ſe uviéra de pagár alcavála, quanto ganáran los Alcavaléros con v.m? *If there ſhoulde bee ſubſidie gathered vp of euery foole, how much would the gatherers of the ſubſidies put into their purſe with your worſhip?*

F. En éſſa hazienda nádie podria tratár, porque dizque es património de v.m. *In this goods none could meddle, bicauſe it is ſaide it is your patrimonie.*

G. Todo es de vn pedáço v.m. *All your worſhip is one peece.*

F. Si, peró es de aguijón para picár a v.m. *Yea, but it is a pricke to ſpurre you forewarde.*

G. Mas no créo que es ſino de atun de yjáda. *But I beleeue it not but that is a peece of a Tunnie fiſh of the bellie ſide.*

F. Si de atun fuéra ya v.m. uviéra arremetido a la pieça, como el aſno a la cevada. *If it were of a Tunnie fiſh you had ſet vpon a peece of it as greedilie as an aſſe on the prouender.*

G. Paréce me hermáno que aunque tu entráſte en la corte, nunca la corte entró en ti. *It ſeemes to me brother, although thou entredſt into the court, the court neuer entred vnto thee.*

F. En la de los puércos concédo, porque como es tu juridición, no ſe háze en ella, ſino lo que tu ordénas. *In that of hogs I graunt, for as it is thy iuriſdiction, there is nothing done therein but that thou doeſt appoint.*

G. Por vída tuya que me digas, quantos curſos tienes de nécio. *I pray thee tell me how many degrees of a foole haſt thou?*

F. Los miſmos que vos de majadéro. *As many as thou haſt of a ioulthead.*

G. Yo pienſo, que éras ya doctór en ynſenſato. *I thinke thou waſt doctor in ſenceleſſenes.*

F. Y vos eſtáys graduádo por cavalleríza. *And you taken degree in the ſtable.*

G. A Dios hermáno, y roe bien eſſos grançónes. *Farewell brother, and gnaw well theſe bukes.*

F. Y *And*

F. Y rumiád vos como buen cabrón eſótros.

I. Par diez, bueno te ha parado el amígo.

F. Amígo ſerá el de v'na taça de vino.

I. E'ſte es de los que aconcejáva el óſſo, que hizieſſemos poco caſo.

F. Como es eſſe quento?

I. Quenta yſópo, que vna véz dos amígos ván camíno a pie, por vn monte, y ſalió a ellos vn óſſo, el vno echando mano a ſu eſpada, ſe quíſo defendér a ſi y a ſu compañéro, al qual díxo que hizieſſe lo miſmo, para que ni el vno ni el ótro murieſſen, el compañero que tenía mas cuenta con ſu ſalúd, que con el del ótro, a trevióſe ántes a ſus pies, que a ſus mános, y no curando del compañéro, dio a huýr a vn árbol álto que allí vído, y ſe ſubió en el, donde eſtuvo ſegúro del peligro. El compañéro viſto que el ſolo no ſe podía defendérſe del óſſo, ſe dexó caér en tiérra haziéndo mueſtras de que eſtáva muerto, tenía el huélgo y no reſolláva miéntras el óſſo llegó y le olió todo, las narízes y la boca, y los oýdos, y penſando que eſtáva muérto, ſe fue de allí, ſin hazérle ningun daño. El que eſtáva en el árbol, víſto que el óſſo era ýdo, baxó del, y pregunto a ſu compañéro, que éra aquello que el oſſo le avía dicho al oýdo: El otro reſpondió, dezíame que con tan ruynes compañeros como vos, nunca hizieſſe camíno otra vez.

F. Reſpondió muy diſcretaménte, y ſi yo lo ſupiéra ántes, uviéra le contádo eſſe quénto a eſtotro mierda en palíllo, que pienſa que ſábe mas que Bártulo ni Baldo.

I. Por cierto el túvo demaſiada razón, amotejarte de nécio pues eſtuviſte

F. *And brouſe you as a good he-goat theſe others.*

I. *By ten, thy friend hath brought thee to a good paſſe.*

F. *He will rather proone a friend to a cup of wine.*

I. *This is ſuch a friend that the beare counſelled that we ſhould make but little reckoning of.*

F. *How is that tale?*

I. *Æſope tels, that on a time two friendes trauelled a foote together, and going by a wood, a beare came out to them, the one laying hand on his ſword meant to defend himſelfe, and his companion whom he willed that he ſhould doe the like, that neither one of them nor the other might not miſcarrie; his companion which made more account of his owne ſafetie then his fellowes, was more bolde vpon his feete then vpon his hands, and not reſpecting his fellow, betooke himſelfe to fly to a high tree which there he ſawe, and climed vp the ſame, where he was ſafe from the danger. His companion ſeeing that alone he could not defend himſelfe from the beare, caſt himſelfe downe on the ground, making ſhewes that he was dead, he held his breath, and did not once blowe while the beare came and ſmelt him round, his noſe and his mouth, and his eares, thinking he had been dead went his way, without doing him any harme. He that was in the tree, ſeeing that the beare was gone, came downe the tree, and asked his fellow what was that that the beare had told him in his eare: The other anſwered, he told me that with ſuch bad companions as your ſelfe I neuer ſhoulde trauell againe.*

F. *He anſwered verie well, and if I had knowne it before, I would haue told this tale to this turd vpon a ſticke, which thinkes hee knowes more then* Bartulus *or* Baldus.

I. *Truely hee had to too much cauſe to ſcoffe at thee for a foole, ſeeing thou*

víſte tan torpe que no entendíſte ſus pronóſticos y adivinánças.

thou wert ſo dull that thou vnderſtoodeſt not his prognoſtications and diuinings.

F. Pues tu entiendes las mejór?

F. Doeſt thou then vnderſtand them better?

I. Yo entiendo las como el las díxo.

I. I vnderſtand them as he ſpake them?

F. Pues yo bien créo que entiéndo Romançe, y el en Romance habláva que no en algaravía.

F. But I beleeue well that I vnderſtand Spaniſh, and he ſpake in Spaniſh and not in the Moores toong.

I. Pues quieres vér como debáxo del fayál ay al: y que aun que te habló en eſpañol, es algaravía de allende para ti.

I. But wilt thou ſee, how vnder courſe attire is ſome wiſedome, & although he ſpake Spaniſh it is the Moores toong to thee.

F. Ya lo deſſéo vér como es.

F. I deſire to ſee how it is.

I. Pues lo priméro que díxo que el Turco ſe ha tornádo móro, es lo el de profeſſión y de ley, y ſuelo ſiempre: tódos síguen la léta de Mahóma. Que Venécia náda en água, es verdád que eſtá fundada en la már, que Ytália eſtá liéna de hómbres, tambien es verdád como Ynglatiérra lo eſtá, Tambien que en Fráncia, ay mas de cien mil hombres de guerra, quien no lo sábe que quando el Rey quiera, podrá ſácár della mas de dozientos mil.

I. The firſt then that hee ſaide, that the Turke is become a Moore or an Infidell, he is ſo by his profeſſion and law, and alwaies hath beene: all follow the ſect of Mahomet. That Venice doth ſwim in water, it is true, for it is built in the ſea: that Italy is full of men, alſo it is true as England is: alſo that in France are more then a hundred thouſand men of armes, who knowes it not, that when the king will, hee may drawe out thereof more then two hundred thouſand.

F. Todo éſſo bien lo entiendo yo, peró lo de más, como ſe puede entendér, que el conde de Flandes aya dormído con la Réyna deſpaña y no ſe anda el mundo en guerras.

F. All this I vnderſtand well, but the reſt how is it to be vnderſtoode, that the earle of Flaunders hath lien with the Queene of Spain, and the world not to be vp in armes.

I. Pues bobo no sábes tu, que el conde de flandes y el rey deſpaña es todo una própria perſona.

I. Why foole doſt not know, that the earle of Flaunders and the king of Spaine is all one perſon.

F. Iuro a tal, que tiene razón, que no avía yo caýdo en ello.

F. I ſweare by ſuch a one, hee ſaith true that I did not light vpon.

I. Pues lo demas que díze que el ſol es mayor que toda la tierra, es muy gran verdád, ſegun demonſtracióes aſtrológicas, que yo con ſabér poco te las pudiéra dár a entendér, ſi uviéra lugár. Que la luna aparecerá cada noche de ſu manera, eſſo tu lo vées cada dia con ſus creſciéntes y menguantes, nunca eſtá una noche, como eſtúvo otra: pues que arderán muchos móntes, tambien es verdád, que ay en el mundo muchos que

I. But the reſt, which he ſaith, that the ſun is bigger then the whole earth, is very true, according to aſtrological demonſtrations, which I in knowing but a little coulde eaſilie make thee vnderſtand, if there were time and place, that the moone will appeere as it was wont, that thou ſeeſt continually with hir waxing and waning, ſhe is neuer one night as ſhe was the other night, then that many mountaines ſhall burne, alſo it is true, for there bee many

que llámán Bolcánes, como el de Sicília, que ſiempre eſtá ardiendo. Que morirá mucho ganado, quien lo ygnóra que lo han de matár los hombres para comér.

many in the worlde, as mount Ætna in Sicilie, which alwaies burnes, &c. that there ſhall bee a great ſlaughter of cattell who is ignorant thereof, for men are to kill them for to eate them.

F. Todo eſſo entiendo bien, peró aquello de aquellos mónſtruos, que echarán llamas por la boca, y que hémos de comér lo que ellos vomitáren, no puédo y penſár que ſéa.

F. All this I vnderſtande well, but that of thoſe monſters, which ſhall caſt out flames out of their mouthes, and that we ſhall eate of that they ſhall vomite, I cannot thinke what it may be.

I. Eſſo es mas fácil que eſótro, porque aquellos monſtruos, ſon los hórnos ado ſe cueze el pan, que échan llámas, y por la boca vomítan el pán que comémos.

I. This is more eaſie then the other, for thoſe monſters are ouens, where they bake bread which caſt out fire, and by the mouth of it, it vomiteth the bread which we eate.

F. Aora digo que tienes razón, y que yo eſtávà en bábia, y que puede vn nécio con vna necedad forjáda en ſu ymaginación dár en que entendér a cien ſabios.

F. Now I ſay you ſay true, and that I was in foolerie, and that a foole with his fooliſhnes framed in his owne imagination may giue to a hundred wiſe men matter to picke out.

I. Aſſi le a aconteció al poéta Oméro, que como con la vejéz eſtuvieſſe ciégo y ſe anduvieſſe paſſeando por la orilla de la már, y oyó hablár a ceirtos peſcádores, que en aquel punto ſe eſtávan eſpulgando, y come les preguntáſſe que peſca hazían, ellos entendiendo por los piójos, reſpondiéron los que tenémos buſcámos y los que no tenemos hallámos, pues como el buen Oméro no vieſſe lo que ellos hazían, y por eſta cauſa no entendieſſe la Enígma, fue tanto lo que fatigó ſu ymaginación y entendimiénto, por entendér la y alcançár el ſecreto dello, que fue baſtante eſta peſadumbre a hazer le morír.

*I. So it happened to the Poet Homer, that as he was with age blinde and went walking by the ſea ſhoare, and heard certaine fiſhermen talking, that at that time were a lowſing themſelus, & as he asked them, what fiſh they caught, they vnderſtanding that he had meant their lice, they anſwered, thoſe that we * haue, we ſeeke for, and thoſe that we * haue not we find, but as the good Homer, could not ſee what they did, and for this cauſe could not vnderſtand the riddle, it did ſo greeue his vnderſtanding to obtaine the ſecret of this matter, which was a ſufficient greefe to cauſe his death.*

* i. Haue in their clothes, i. lice.

* i. Haue not in hand.

F. El lo hízo no como ſábio, ſino como muy gran nécio, en martarſe por lo, que no podía alcançár.

F. He did that not as a wiſe man, but as a very great foole, in caſting awaie himſelfe for that he coulde not reach vnto.

I. Yo bien créo que no morirás tu deſſe acháque.

I. I well beleeue thou wouldſt not die for ſuch a matter.

F. No hermáno, que no páre ya mi madre, y yo contento me con lo que buenaménte y ſin mucho trabájo

F. No brother, for my mother is paſt childe bearing, and I content my ſelfe with that I may well and without much

trabájo puedo alcançár.

I. ✻Pues quien no es mas de otro, no meréce mas que ótro, y quien no ſáve no vále, y quien ruyn es en ſu villa, ruýn es en Sevilla, y quien adelante no mira atras ſe hálla.

F. Yo hermáno, quiero andár por do anda el buey, y aſentár el pie llano, no tomár de las cóſas mas de aquéllo que me dieron, y porque quiero del mundo gozár, quiero oýr, y vér y callár.

much labour reach vnto.

I. But hee that is not more then another doth deſerue no more then another, and hee that hath not knowledge, is of no woorth, and he that in his owne towne is vile, and is alſo bad and naught in Seuile, and he that lookes not before he leape may fall into the ditch.

F. Brother, I wil go where the oxe hath troden, and ſet downe my foote ſofte and faire, not to take more matters then that they ſhall giue mee, and bicauſe I will liue in reſt I will heare and ſee and hold my peace.

Diálogo ſexto, que paſſó entre dos *amigos Yngléſes y dos Eſpañóles, que ſe* juntaron en la lónja de Lóndres, en el *qual ſe trátan muchas coſas curióſas, y de gúſto, ſon los Yngleſes* Egídio *y* Guillérmo, *los Eſpañoles* Diego *y* Alónſo.

The ſixt Dialogue which paſſed between two friendes Engliſhmen, and two *Spaniards, which met vpon the Exchange in* London: wherein are handled many curious matters, and delightful: the Engliſh men are named *Giles* and *William*, the Spaniardes *Iames* and *Alonſo*.

E. QVe hazéis Guillermo?
G. Ya lo veis Exídio.
E. Como eſtáys tan oçióſo?
G. ✻*Quia nemo me conduxit.*
E. Pues yo os conbído aun ráto de buena converçación.
G. Adónde?
E. Venid os comígo, no yréys adonde yo os lleváre?
G. Si me lo dezís priméro, por que yr hombre, ſin ſavér adonde, ſería neçedád.
E. Luego no hazéis confiánça de mi?
G. Si hago, mas no ſabéis que no todos los umóres ſon unos, y que podrá ſer, lo que a vos os da guſto, enfadár me a mi.
E. Si, peró yo conózco ya vueſtro umór, y me acomódo con el.
G. Con todo eſſo, dezídme adonde me lleváys.
E. Vámos a la lónja, adonde me eſtán eſperando dos amígos Eſpañóles, muy diſcretos, guſtaréis de ſu buena converſación.

G. Háblan

G. WHat do you William?
W. You euen ſee Giles.
G. Why are you ſo idle?
W. Bicauſe no man hath hired me.
G. Then I inuite you for a while into good companie?
W. Whither?
G. Come with me, will you not go whither I ſhall leade you?
W. If you tell me firſt, for it were follie for a man to go hee knowes not whither.
G. Do you not now truſt me?
W. Yes I do truſt you, but do you not knowe, that all humours are not one, and it may be, that which likes you may very much diſpleaſe me.
G. Yea, but I know your humour, and I do applie my ſelfe vnto it.
W. But for all this, tell me whither you carie me.
G. Let vs goe to the Exchange where two Spanyards very diſcreete men my friends are tarrying for me, you ſhall haue a taſte of their good converſation. *W. Speake*

G. Háblan ynglés?

E. Vn poquíto, peró pues vos entendéis bien el Eſpañol, y yo tanbien no ympórta.

G. Huelgo me de yr, aunque no ſéa, mas de por aprendér algunas buenas fraſis Eſpañólas.

E. Eſſas ſé yo que las tiénen buenas, porque ſon de *Toledo* donde es la príma de la lengua Eſpañola.

G. Son por ventúra aquéllos, que ſe ándan alli paſeándo.

E. Los própios, vámos allá, Dios guarde a vueſtas mercédes.

D. Y venga con vueſtas merçédes.

E. Paſſe adelante la converſación de que ſe tratáva aóra.

D. No pareze ſino que la entendiſtes, que reſpondiſtes a élla ſin daros el pie.

A. Tratávamos de las ſalutaciónes, que ſe úſan en *Ynglatérra*, y de las que ſe úſan in Eſpáña.

G. Quales ſon mejóres?

A. Cierto en eſto, adonde quiera, ay abúſos, quando dize el eſpañól Dios os guarde, en ora buéna eſtéys, Dios os de ſalúd, y el Yngles buénas tárdes y otras ſemejantes yo apruévola por buena ſalutación.

G. Pues el mundo la repruéva, y tienen por tóſcos a los que la úſan.

A. Y aun por eſſo ſe díze, que anda el mundo a el rebéz, y no ay mejór ſeñál de que ello es buéno, de vér que el mundo lo repruéba.

G. De las demas ſalutaciónes que os paréce?

A. De las de mas dígo, que quando el *Yngles* pregunta a el otro, como eſtáys, dize una gran neçedád, y quando el *Eſpañól* dize béſo os las manos, dize una gran mentíra.

G. Meneſtér es que déys razón, de vueſtra nueva opinión.

A. Aóra dezíme por vueſtra vída, no os pareçe neçedad a el que vos veys bueno preguntár le como eſtá?

G. Teneys

W. Speake they Engliſh?

G. A very little, but ſeeing you vnderſtand well the Spaniſh and I alſo, it makes no matter.

W. I am glad to goe, though it be but to learne ſome good Spaniſh phraſes.

G. Thoſe I knowe they haue and good ones, bicauſe they are of Toledo *where is the prime of the Spaniſh toong.*

W. They are peraduenture thoſe which goe there walking.

G. The very ſame, let vs goe meete them, God ſaue your worſhips.

I. And welcome in Gods name.

G. Proceede in that conference which paſſed betwixt you.

*I. It ſeemes that you vnderſtood it, that you made anſwere to it without giuing * you the qu.*

* *As in plaies one takes the laſt word of anothers ſpeech, and by that knowes when to ſpeake.*

A. We entreated of the ſalutations which are vſed in England, *and of thoſe which are vſed in Spaine.*

W. Which are better?

A. Truely in that matter, there are abuſes on both parts, when the Spaniard ſaith God keepe you, a good houre haue you, God giue you health: and the Engliſhman God den, or good euen, and the other like, I allow it for good ſalutation.

W. But generally it is diſallowed, and they hold them rude that vſe it.

A. And therefore it is ſaide, the world goes quite contrarie, and there is no better ſigne that it is good, then to ſee it diſallowed in the world.

W. And of the other ſalutations what think you?

A. Of the reſt I ſaie, that when the Engliſhman *doth aske the other, how * he doth, he vtters his owne ſimplicitie, and when the* Spaniard *ſaith, I kiſſe your handes, hee telleth a great lie.*

* *The Spaniard alloweth not how do you, but how doth your worſhip or maſterſhip.*

W. You muſt giue a reaſon of your newe opinion.

A. Now tell me I pray you, doth it not ſeeme vnto you a ſimplicitie, to aske a man whom you ſee well, how he doth?

G. Tenéys razón, peró podría tenér algun mal ſecréto que no ſe le eche de vér.

G. You ſaie well, but he may haue ſome inward griefe, which appeereth not outwardely.

A. Eſtónçes que remedáis vos, con preguntár le como eſtá, No ſería mejor, rogára Dios, que le de ſalúd, como haze el otro.

A. Then what remedie do you giue him in aſking him how he doth, were it not better to pray to God to ſend him helth as the other doth.

G. Aóra dezíd lo de el Eſpañól.

W. Now tell that of the Spaniard.

A. El Eſpañól dígo, que dizé mas mentiras entre año en eſte cáſo, que reáles da por Dios, porque dezír a el que encuéntra, veſo las mános a v. m. ſi habla de preſénte, bien vémos, que miénte, pues no ſe las beſa, ſi de futuro tanbien porque bien ſabémos, que quándo el otro quiſiéſſe dar ſe las por muy amígo que fueſſe no ſe las querría el veſar.

A. The Spaniard I ſay in this caſe telleth more lies within the yeere, then he giues ſixpences for God ſake, for to ſay to one, that he meeteth I kiſſe the handes of your worſhip, if he ſpeake of the time preſent, we well ſee that he lieth ſeeing he doth not kiſſe them: if of the time to come, in like manner; for we well know when the other would giue him his hands to kiſſe, if he were neuer ſo great a friend, yet he would not kiſſe them.

G. Si peró paréçe que es vna manera de reconoſimiénto de ſuperioridád a el que díze.

W. Yea but it ſeemeth that it is a manner of acknowledging of ſuperiorite to him, to whom it is ſpoken.

A. Aſsí es, peró éſſe reconoſimiénto no éſta mas que en la lengua por ✻ que el refran díze, manos béza hombre que querría vér cortádas.

A. So it is, but this acknowledging is no more, but in the toong: for the prouerbe ſaith, A man kiſſeth thoſe hands that he would ſee cut off.

G. Yo os diré lo que ſubcedió al propóſito, a vn cavallero viejo eſpañól, con otro moço y fue, que como el moço por buena criança, le dixo a el viejo ſuplíco a v. m. me dé las mános, que ſe las quiero beſar el viéjo confiádo en ſu ançianía, las alargó para que ſe las beſaſſe, el otro ya arrepentído ſe las aſió con las ſuyas y con muy buen donáire le dixo ſenór yo y v. m. a otros dos.

I. I will tell you that which happened fit for this matter, to an auncient gentleman, a Spaniard, with another yoong man; and it was, as the yoong man for manners ſake ſaide to the old man, I entreate your worſhip that you will giue me your hands, for I will kiſſe them: the olde man preſuming vpon his yeeres, put them out that he might kiſſe them, the other repenting, tooke him faſt by the hands with his owne hands, and with very good pleaſantnes, ſaid vnto him, Sir, I and your worſhip againſt other two.

G. El moço andúvo diſcréto en hazér lo ansí, y el viéjo néçio, porque bien ſavémos, que palábras de buena criança no obligan.

W. The yoong man was wiſe in ſo doing, and the olde man ſimple, for well wee knowe that wordes of compliment binde not.

D. Anſi es verdád, que eſſa çerimónia de beſár la mano, ſolo la deve el vaſállo a el ſeñór.

I. It is true, this ceremonie of kiſſing the hand onely the vaſſall oweth vnto his Lord.

A. E'ſſa ſola ſálua guarda tiene nueſtra coſtumbre

A. This ſafegard hath our cuſtome, that with

costumbre que con dezír,béso a v.m.las manos,paréçe que es dezír,reconosco a v. m. por mi Señór,y yo por vuestro vasállo.

E. Y que os paréçe de ésta costumbre, que tenémos en ynglatérra de asír nos las manos vnos otros?

A. Dos manos asídas,siempre fue símbolo de amistád, peró dár los tirónes, que aqui se dán vno a ótro, tengo lo por poca gravedád, y no sé si diga por livandád.

E. Antes paréçe que aquello es por mas confirmación de la amistád.

A. E'lla confirmación ha de ser con óbras,y no con ademánes ni tirónes, quanto mas que deve avér muchos que con la máno asída y tirando, le deven de estár con el coraçón matando le.

G. Que dizís de la otra de besár los hombres a las mugéres publicamente.

A. Essa costúmbre túvo su princípio en Róma, en el tiempo que ella floreçia, aunque se ynventó a diferente propósito de el que aóra se usa.

G. A que fin la ynbentáron?

A. Los Romanos aboreçían tanto el víno en las mugéres, que tenían ley,en que condenáva a muérte ala que lo bevía,y porque no lo pudiessen hazer alcõdidamente,tenian liçénçia sus parientes de besár la,para que por el olfáto conoçiessen,si lo avía bevido.

G. Si aóra se vbiessen de matár todas las que lo beven, yo veo que quedáramos sin mugéres,

E. No créo,que fuera muy gran pérdida, segun nos son causa de males.

G. Yo para mi tengo,que la mayor causa de la desoluçion en algunas mugeres de *Ynglaterra* es ésta costumbre de besállos en publico, por que con ésto pierden la

with saying, I kisse the hands of your worship,it seemes it is to saie, I acknowledge your worship for my lord,and my selfe for your vassall.

G. And what is your opinion of this custome, which wee haue in England to shake hands one with another?

A. Two handes fastened togither, alwaies hath beene a token of friendship, but to shake and plucke them, as here they do one to another, I hold it for small grauitie, and I knowe not whether I may call it lightnes.

G. Rather it seemeth that it is for the greater confirmation of friendship.

A. This confirmation ought to bee with workes, and not with gestures, nor shaking of the hands, and so much the rather, bicause there are many which with hand in hand shake hands, and in hart would kill each other.

W. What say you of that custome of kissing between men and women and that openly?

A. This custome first began in Rome, in the time it most flourished,although it were inuented for a different purpose,then it is now vsed.

W. For what purpose was it inuented?

A. The Romanes did so much detest wine in women,that they had a law,in which they did condemne to death that woman which did drinke wine, and because they might not drinke it without being knowen, their kinsfolkes had leaue to kisse the women, that they might knowe by their breath whether they had dronke wine or no.

W. If nowe they should kill all those women which drinke wine, I see we should be quite without women.

G. I beleeue that it were not any great losse, seeing they are cause of many euils vnto vs.

W. I holde that the greatest cause of dissolutenes in some women in England *is this custome of kissing publikely, for that by this meanes they*

la verguença y a el tocamiénto del beſo, les entra vn veneno que las ynficióna.

A. Antes que ſe yntroduxéſſe éſta coſtumbre en Roma, cuenta Tito Lívio, que deſterráron de ella a vn ſenadór, perſona de mucha quénta, ſólo por que beſó a ſu mugér delante de vna hija ſúya

G. De vn eſtrémo viniéron a dár en otro eſtrémo.

E. En Eſpaña no ſe vſa beſár los hombres a las mugéres?

D. Si béſan los marídos a ſus mugéres, y eſto allá detrás de ſiete paredes, donde aun la luz no los puéda vér.

G. Es por que los Eſpañóles ſon demaſiadaménte celozos.

A. No, ſi no, per que ſómos tan trabieſſos, que no hémos meneſtér eſſe apetito, para hazér mil malos recaudos que ſería ſi tubieſſemos eſſe Ocaſión.

G. Yo créo, que antes cauſaría haſtío, y no andarían los hombres, tan golóſos, por que vedamiento es cauſa del apetito.

A. No es fuego el de la concupiſçiénçia, que ſe ahóga por echarle mucha materia, antes es como la ydropeſía, que mientras mas el enfermo béue mas ſed tiéne.

D. Eſpecialmente entre los Eſpañóles que por ſér de complexión coléricos, eſtá *Venus* en ſu punto.

G. Yo entiéndo éſſo al contrário, por que *Venus* conſiſte mas en vmedád que en calór, por lo qual entiendo que mas aptos ſon para ſemejante exercício los v'medos de complexión, que los coléricos que con de ſu naturaléza ſécos.

A. Si peró la humidád ſin calor, ſeriá como la tiérra ſin el ſol, que no es ſufiçiénte de míſma a produzír coſa algúna.

D. Por éſſe, los poetas, caſáron a *Venus* con *Bulcáno* Dios pe el fuégo.

E. Mas *Bulcáno* ni *Venus* ſin *Ceres* y *Baco*

loſe their ſhamefaſtnes, and at the very touch of the kiſſe, there entreth into them a poiſon which doth infect them.

A. Before this cuſtome was brought into Rome, Titus Linius telleth that they baniſhed out of the citie a ſenator, a perſon of great account, onely bicauſe he kiſſed his wife before one of his owne daughters.

W. They fell from one extremitie into another.

G. In Spaine do not men vſe to kiſſe women?

I. Yes the husbands kiſſe their wiues, but as if it were behinde ſeuen wals, where the very light cannot ſee them.

W. It is becauſe the Spaniards are too iealous.

A. No not ſo, but becauſe we are ſo wanton, that we neede nothing to helpe our appetite, to make a thouſand ill matches which would fall out if we ſhould haue this occaſion.

G. I do rather beleeue, that it would cauſe ſatietie, and that men would not ſeeke it ſo greedily, becauſe forbidding is cauſe of deſire.

A. The fire of concupiſcence, is not ſuch as is extinguiſhed by caſting on much matter, but like the dropſie, that the more the ſicke perſon drinketh the more thirſt ſtill he hath.

I. Eſpecially among Spaniards, which are of a cholerick complexion, Venus *is in her full force.*

G. I take that quite contrarie, becauſe Venus *cõſiſteth more in moiſture then in heat, whereby it ſeemes to me that the moiſt of complexion are more apt to ſuch matters, then the cholericke which are by nature drie.*

A. Yea but moiſture without heate, would be as the earth without the ſunne, which is not ſufficient of it ſelfe to bring foorth any thing.

I. For this cauſe the Poets married Venus *with* Vulcan *God of fire.*

G. But neither Venus *nor* Vulcan, *without* Ceres

Baco no valen vn *caco.

G. Pues yo para mi tengo, que en las tierras mas frías, está mas reconçentrádo el calór naturál, y por éſſo con mayór aptitúd, en los que biven en las tales regiónes.

A. No es eſſe calór reconçentrádo que está enel coraçon el que es causa de este fuégo, ſino el que está en la ſangre y partes exteriores.

G. Si peró no me negaréis, que el calór de la ſangre no proçéde de el, de el hígado.

A. Aſſi es verdád, peró no óbra éſte efécto en ſu origen y fúente, ſi no quando ſe ha derramádo por las venas, y como la virtúd eſparzída, es mas fláca que quando está vñida, ſi quando lo eſta es acometído el calór de ſu contrário el frío, y éſto confuérça y vehemẽncia vénſe y resfría de ſuerte que no puede obrár ni hazér ſu efecto.

D. Aſſi es, y la eſperiẽncia de éſto ſe vée en los cabrónes, que es animál luxurioſiſſimo, y en llevándo le a tiérras frías, o no puede bivír, o pierde mucho de ſu potẽncia.

G. Los Faunos o ſemicápras, que los antiguos llamávan médios dióſes cuentan los autóres, y poetas, que éran en eſtrémo luxuriósos.

E. Es verdád, que úvo o ay táles hombres en en mundo llamados faunos?

A. En la vida de Sant Páblo primér hermitáño ſe quenta, que en aquel deſierto donde el hazía ſu penitẽncia, la hazía tanbien ſanto Antonio, el qual como por rebelacion ſupieſſe como eſtava allí cérca ſan Páblo, le fue aviçitár y en el camíno encontro con uno, el qual de la çinta para arriba, tenía forma perfecta de hombre, ſalvo que la cabeça tenia llẽna de corne-

Ceres *and* Bacchus *are worth a* cherrie ſtone.

* Cáco, *a fruit in the Indies or a ſmall peece of money there.*

W. But i for my part thinke, that in countries moſt cold, the naturall heate is more vnited in his center, and therfore is there greater deſire in thoſe that liue in thoſe countries.

A. It is not that heate, which is ſetled about the hart, which is the cauſe of this fire, but that which is in the blood and exteriour parts.

W. Yea but you will not denie, but that the heate of the blood doth proceede from the heate of the liuer.

A. It is true, but it doth not worke this effect in the origmall and fountaine, except when it hath ſtred it ſelfe by all the vaines, and as the vertue diſperſed is more feeble then when it is vnited; ſo when it is ſo, the heate is ſet vpon by his contrarie the colde, and this cold with force and vehemencie doth ouercome and coole in ſuch manner, that it cannot worke his effect.

I. So it is, and the experience of this is ſeene in great hee-goats, which is a moſt luxurious beaſt, and in carrying him to cold countries, either he cannot liue, or he loſeth much of his naturall ſtrength.

W. The Faunes or halfe goates which the auncient writers called halfe gods, authors and poets tell that they were woonderfully luxurious.

G. Is it true, that there were and are ſuch men the world called Faunes?

A. In the life of ſaint Paull the firſt Hermit, they ſay, that in that deſart where he made his repentance, Saint Anthonie likewiſe made his, who by reuelation knowing he was neere Saint Paull, went to viſit him, and in the way met with one, which from the girdle vpward had the perfect forme of a man, except that he had his head full of little hornes, & from

corneçuelos pequeños, y de médio para abajo éra cabrón con muy largas vedijas, y pies de lo mismo.

E. Hablava alguna cosa?

A. Si que el sancto le habló, y le preguntó quien éra y el en un lenguáje muy bárvaro, pero tal que el sancto le púdo entendér, le respondió, que era vno de los avitadóres de aquél desiérto, a quien la çiega gentilidád adoráva por dióses, peró que éran criatúras mortáles, y díxo mas a el santo, que su grey y génte le enbiáva a el por embaxador a rogar le a el Sancto, que róga se por todos a el comun Dios de todas las gentes, que bien savían que avia baxádo de el çielo y hecho se hombre por redimír a los hombres, y con esto se fue por aquel desiérto, con tanta ligereza que en muy breve espáçio, le perdió de vísta el sancto.

the middle downeward he was a he-goate with very long shagge haire, and feete of the same.

G. Spake he any thing?

A. Yea for Saint Anthonie spake vnto him, and asked him who he was, and he in a language verie barbarous, yet notwithstanding such a language that the holy man could vnderstand, he answered him, that he was one of the inhabitants of that desert, whom the blinde Gentiles worshipped for Gods, but that they were mortall creatures, and saide moreouer to the Saint, that his people & nation sent him to him for an ambassador to entreat the holy mã, that he should pray for all of them, to the common God of all nations, for wel they knew, that he was come down from heauen, and being made man to redeeme mankinde, and herewithall he went thorow the desert with such swiftnes, that in short space the holy man lost the sight of him.

D. Yo he leýdo tanbien, que a el emperadór Constantino magno, le traxéron de essos desiértos, otro bíbo, y lo estúbo muchos dias, y despues de muérto saládo, le traxéron por muchas partes de el mundo, para que todos le biéssen.

I. Also haue I read, that they brought to the Emperour Constantine the great, out of these deserts, another aline, & there he was many daies, and afterward being dead and salted, they carried him thorow many parts of the world, that all men might see him.

G. Bolviendo a nuestra primera plática, que os pareçe de esta ciudád de Londres?

W. Turning to our first speech, what do you thinke of the citie of London?

A. A mi me paréçe, en verano tienda, y en inviérno contienda.

A. It seemes to me in sommer a shop, and in winter a contention.

G. Como se entiende ésso?

W. How is this to be vnderstood?

A. Digo que paréçe, en veráno tienda, por que en aquel tiempo, todos los Señóres, cavalléros, y hidálgos, se salen fuera de ella, y se ván a sus aldéas a passár el veráno, quedando en ella solos los oficiáles con sus tiéndas abiértas.

A. I say it seemes in sommer a shop, for that in that time, all the noble men, knights, and gentlemen, do goe out of the citie, and they goe to countrey villages to passe ouer the sommer, onely artificers remaining in it, with their shops open.

G. Y por que lo de mas?

W. And why the other?

A. En ynviérno son los términos y, como acúden de todo el réyno a ella

A. In winter are the termes, and out of euerie place of the kingdom, they come

to

élla a ſus pléitos eſtá, hecha toda contiénda o pléito, peró vltra de eſto es vna de las mejores ciudádes de el mundo a lo que yo entiendo.

to it to their pleadings, and ſo it is made nothing but contention and wrangling in lawe, but beſides this it is one of the beſt cities in the worlde as farre as I perceiue.

G. Que dezís de toda la tierra en generál?

W. What ſay you of the whole land in generall?

A. Que es fertiliſſima y abundante, de todas las coſas que ella produze, eſpeçíal de ganádos, déven de ſer los mas grueſſos y mejóres de el mundo.

A. That it is moſt fruitfull, and abounding of all things, which it doth bring foorth, eſpecially flockes of ſheepe, which are the greateſt and beſt of the worlde.

G. Y tanbien de ſemíllas es muy fértil.

W. And alſo of ſeades it is very fertill.

A. Anſi es verdád, peró como no puede avér coſa perfecta en eſte mundo, ya que en eſſo es abundante, le fáltan otras coſas neçeſſárias, a la vida vmána, que ella por la frialdád de ſu ſitio, no puede produzir, y anſi tiéne neçeçidád, de comunicatión con otros réinos.

A. It is very true, but as there cannot be any thing perfect in this worlde, ſo although in this it abounds, yet other neceſſarie things are wanting in it, which are required to humane life, which thorow the coldnes of the ſituation, it cannot bring foorth, and ſo it hath neede of commerce with other nations.

G. Que coſas ſon eſſas, que dezís que le fáltan, que yo créo que no ay coſa en el mundo, que en ella no ſe halle.

W. What things are thoſe which you ſaie, that are wanting in it, for I beleene that there is not anie thing in the world that in it is not found.

A. Es áſſi verdád, peró es comunicádo de otros réynos, que bien véys vos, que en ella no ſe cría óro ni pláta, no ſe coje vino, ni azéite, açúcar, ſéda, eſpeçiería, ni frútas de las regaládas, como ſon çídras, limónes, límas, naránjas, granádas, alméndras, y otros mil géneros de ellas, muy neçeſſários para el regálo de las gentes, y como dígo de éſtas pocas coſas, pudiéra dezír de otras muchas que déxo.

A. It is true, but it is brought from other countries, for well you ſee that in it, neither groweth gold nor ſilver, nor wine, oyle, ſugar, ſilk, ſpice nor fruits of the fineſt ſorte, as are citrons, lymons, orenges, pomegranats, almonds, & a thouſand other kindes of them, verie neceſſarie for the dayntie feeding of men, & as I ſpake of theſe fewe things, I could ſay of many others which I leaue.

G. Si, peró tenémos otras, que ſírven en lugár de eſſas cóſas, y anſi no las echámos menos, como çervéza por víno, mantéca por azéite, y otras ſemejántes.

W. Yea but wee haue others, which ſerue in ſteed of theſe things, & ſo we want them not, as beere for wine, butter for oyle, & others the like.

A. Con todo éſſo, ſería inposíble podér paſſár éſte réyno ſin comunicaçión con otro, lo que no tiene Eſpáña, que ſola entre todas las provínçias de el mundo, podría paſſár ſin comunicación con otra, por produzír, dentro de ſi todas

A. Notwithſtanding all this, it were impoſſible this kingdome could endure without commerce with others, which Spaine ſtandeth in no neede of, for that alone among all the countries in the world might endure without communicating with any

todas las cosas necessárias, a la vida vmána.

G. Pues, bien os podré yo dezír vna cósa, que España no produze.

A. Qual es?

G. Especiería, que al fin lo tráeis de la yndia.

A. Tenéys razón, que ésta sóla le falta a España, peró, como vos dixístes, tanbien se cría en ella, con que se podria suplír ésta falta.

G. Que es?

A. En lugár de pimiénta, se cría vna yérua que llamámos pimiénto, cuya simiénte es de tanta fuérça, y de el própio efécto que la pimiénta, que viene de yndias, en lugár de clávos, vsan múchos de los ajos, y si no fuésse por vn mal olorzillo que tienen, son mas sabrósos que estótros, de açafrán gran cantidad se coje en España, genxíbre de pocos dias aca, se a començádo a plantár en ella, y se da bien.

G. A lo ménos no me negaréis, ser mas fértil tiérra en general *Ynglaterra* que España.

A. Digo que es verdád, y lo conçédo, peró tanbien os se dezír, que de ésta fertilidád, viene la floxedad en las cárnes, y mantenimiéntos de ella, que són de poco nutrimiénto y sustancia, y ésta es la cáusa, de que los yngléses nos notáys a los Españoles por miserables en el comér, por que las carnes de España, como de tierra mas estéril, són de tanto nutrimiénto que si comiésse de ellas vn hombre tanto como en ynglaterra come, sin dúbda ninguna, reventaría.

D. Por ésso, ay uno manéra de dezír, comun en España, tu padre ✻ çenó carnéro asádo, y acostó se, y murió se pues, no preguntes, de que murió.

A. En la própia España tenémos la isperiéncia de ésto que la *Andaluzía* que es tiérra mas fértil que

* *A prouince in Spaine.*

any other countrey, bringing foorth within it self all those necessarie things for mans life.

W. But well may I tell you one thing which Spaine affoords not.

A. What is it?

W. Spice, which you fetch from the Indies.

A. You say true, for Spaine onely wants this, but as you haue said also, there growes in it that which may supply this want.

W. What is it?

A. In steede of pepper there growes an herbe which we call pepper herbe, whose seede is of such strength, and of the very same effect the pepper is which comes from the Indies. In steede of cloues, many vse garlicke, and if it were not for a little ill smell which it hath, they are more sauorie then the other. Great quantitie of saffron is had in Spaine. Ginger not long since is begun to bee planted therein, and it prospereth well.

W. At least you will not denie me, England *generally to be a more fertile countrie then Spaine.*

A. I say it is true, and I doe graunt it, but also I can tell you that of this fertilitie proceedes the faintnesse of the flesh there, and the substance of it, which is of small nourishment and sustenance, and this is the cause why the English men doe marke the Spaniards for pinching in their diet, for that the flesh of Spaine as of a countrie more barren, is of such nourishment, that if a man should eate of it so much as in England they eat, without doubt he should burst.

I. For this cause there is a common saying in Spaine, thy father supped with mutton rosted, and went to bed and died, do not now aske whereof he died.

A. In Spain we haue the experience of this, that in Andeluzai *which is a country more fertile then * Estremadura*

que *Eſtremadúra.*, las carnes de ella, no ſon con mucho de tanto nutrimiénto, ni tan buen ſavor, como eſtas otras.

madura, the fleſh is not by oddes of ſuch nouriſhment nor of ſo good taſte as that of Eſtremadura.

E. Tanbien ſe vée éſſo en los yngléſes, que van a Eſpáña, que dízen que no puéden comér tanta carne allá, como comían àcá.

G. Alſo it may bee ſeene in Engliſhmen, which go into Spaine, which ſaie that they cannot eate ſo much fleſh there, as they did eate heere.

G. Dezíme a óra, que os paréce, de el trato de nueſtra génte?

W. Tell me now, what you thinke of the Engliſh manner?

A. Generalménte hablándo, toda la gente yngléſa, es benína, y amoróſa, afáble, alégre, y amígos de regozíjos, y fieſtas, agénos de toda melancolía, como aquellos, en quien predomína el humór ſanguíno, peró fuera de éſto, he notádo en todos en generál tan ynſatiáble avarícia, que deſdóra tódas ſus virtudes.

A. Speaking generally, al the Engliſh people are courteous and louing, affable, and merrie, and louers of ſportes and feaſtes, free from all melancholie, as thoſe in whome doth predominate the ſanguine complexion: but beſides this I haue noted in generall, ſuch an inſatiable couetouſnes, as doth deface all their vertues.

G. Y de las mugéres que dezís?

W. And what ſay you of the women?

A. Las mugeres generalménte hablándo, piénſo que ſón las mas hermóſas de el mundo, por que tienen todas tres grácias particuláres, para ſer lo, que ſon en eſtrémo bláncas, coloradas, y rúbias, y la que con éſtas grácias que ſon generáles a todas, aciérta a tenér buenas faiciónes, es acabada en hermoſúra: peró tanbien os dígo con la miſma generalidád, que tienen tres faltas.

A. The women generally, I thinke they are the moſt faire of the world, for they haue all the three ſpeciall graces which make thē ſo, they are woonderfully white & red, & that with theſe graces which are generall to all, there happeneth for them to haue ſuch good fauour, whereby they are moſt beautifull: but alſo I tell you with the ſame generalitie, that they haue three faults.

G. Quales ſon por vida vueſtra?

W. I pray you what are they?

A. No las quiſiéra dezír, por no caér, en deſgrácia con éllas.

A. I would not willingly tell them leaſt I fall into diſgrace with them.

G. Yo ſálgo por fiadór que no cairéis.

W. I will be your ſuretie you ſhall not.

A. ✻ Teneis razón, que quien nunca ſubió, no puede caer, peró las tres faltas ſon, pequeños ojos, grandes bócas, no buena tez en los roſtros, y de eſto es la cáuſa el áyre tan frío y ſutíl, que corre en eſtas partes, que ſe les cúrte y por eſto es buena la ynbinción la, de las mas carillas, aunque yo entiéndo que no deve de baſtár.

A. You ſay true, he that neuer gat vp, can neuer fall, but the three wants are little eies, great mouthes, and not very ſmooth skinne in the face, and heereof the cauſe is for that the aire is ſo colde and ſubtill in theſe parts, which doth tan them, and therefore maskes were well inuented, although as I perceiue they helpe not.

G. Vos lo avéys diſputádo muy bien, y yo os quédo muy aficionádo ſervidór, y aſſi os ſuplíco, que el tiempo que eſtubiéredes en eſta tiérra os ſirváis de mi.

W. You haue diſputed very well, and I remaine your affectionate ſeruant, and ſo I entreat you that the time you are in this countrey you ſo vſe me.

A. Yo

A. I

A. Yo os doy muchas grácias, por el ofreçimiento, y quedo yo no ménos a vuestro servício, y por que se va haziéndo tarde, nos vamos recojéndo alas posádas que ya es óra.

A. I giue you many thankes, for your offer, and I remaine no lesse at your seruice, and because it waxeth late, let vs betake our selues to our lodgings, for it is time.

G. Beso a vuestas merçédes las manos.
D. Yo las de vuestas merçédes.

W. I kisse your hands.
I. And I yours.

Diálogo séptimo, entre un sargénto y *un cavo de esquadra, y un Soldado, en el* qual se trata, de las cosas pertenecientes a *la milícia, y de las calidádes que deve tener un buen Soldado, con muchos dichos graçiósos y buenas quéntos.*

The seuenth Dialogue betweene a Sergeant of a band, and a corporall, and a Souldier, in which are handled matters pertaining to warfare, and the parts that a good soldier ought to haue, with many fine sayings & good speeches.

Sa. ADonde camina señór soldádo?
So. A O señor Sargento házia la tabla, si v.m. no manda otra cosa.

Sa. WHither walke you soldier?
So. O sergeant towards the dicing place, if you command no other matter.

Sa. Lleva muchos dinéros que jugár?

Sa. Do you carry with you much money to play?

So. Mi paga enterita como la reçebí, que no he osádo gastár vn reál, por no quirár se lo a el juégo.

So. My whole pay as I receined it, for I durst not spende ove sixe pence thereof, least I should take away so much from play.

Sa. Esso es de buenos cofrádes, antes falte para el cuerpo que para el juego.

Sa. This is the part of good companions, let there be wanting for the body, rather then for play.

So. A que feria puedo yo ýr, en que mas gane, pues aventúro con quatro ducados ganár quatro-cientos.

So. To what faire may I goe, wherein I may gaine more, seeing I venture with fower duckates, to gaine fower hundred.

Sa. Y si el dado díze mal, allá ván roçín y mançánas.

*Sa. If the die turne ill, there * goes horse and apples.*

So. Señor o rico pijádo, o muerto descalabrádo.

So. Sir, either hanged rich, or dead with head broken.

Sa. Esta es la quénta de los perdídos.

Sa. This is the reckoning of cast awaies.

So. Cuerpo de tal señor, que hijos o mugér tengo yo que mantenér?

So. Bodie of me, what children or wife haue I to keepe?

Sa. Si pero no fuera mejor vestír se que jugár el dinero?

Sa. Yea but were it not better to apparell your selfe, then to play away your money?

So. Yo he hecho mi quenta, y he menester camisas, jubón, sayo, calçones, médias, y çapátos, y sonbréro, y en quatro ducados, no ay para todo, pues conprár vno nuévo,

So. I haue reckoned with my selfe, I haue neede of shirts, doublet, cassocke, breeches, stockings, shooes, & hat, and in fower ducats there is not for all this, for to buy one thing new

* *A horse laden with apples passing a riuer was carried away, and so both lost.*

évo,y traér lo otro viéjo, no pareçe bien,quiero jugár,quiça ganaré para comprár lo todo.

new and weare another old,seemes not well,I will play, peraduenture I shall get so much to buy all new.

Sa. Y si los pierde, quedar se ha sin lo vno y lo otro.

Sa. If you loose, you must go without one and the other.

So. Señor,préso por mil,préso por mil y quiniéntos, todo es estár preso, diré estonçes desnudo naçí, y desnúdo me hallo y desnudo moriré.

So. Sir,arrested for a thousand, taken for a thousand fiue hundred,all is but to be arrested, I will then saie I was borne naked,and naked I finde my selfe,and naked shall I die.

Sa. Digame, sáve quando entramos de guárdia?

Sa. Tell me, do you knowe when we watch?

So. Esta nóche le toca a la compañía.

So. This night it fals to the companie.

Sa. Con que armas sirve con pica,o arcabúz?

Sa. What armes serue you with, a pike or shot?

So. Con vn mosquéte de siete palmos.

So. With a musket of seauen handfuls.

Sa. Pues como díze, que no sacó mas que quatro ducadas tieniendo siete depaga.

Sa. How then saide you, that you had but fower ducats, hauing seauen for your paie?

So. Vno me descontáron de pólvora y cuerda los contadores, otro he dado a mi camarada para la despensa de esta semána, y otro que se me quitó de los *socorros.

So. One ducate defalked for powder and match, the other haue I giuen to my comerade for the charges of this weeke, and the other was taken out for lendings.

* Succors or lendings which they giue souldiers when there is no paie and when the paie comes they take it off.

Sa. Justa está la quenta.

Sa. The reckoning is very right.

So. Es como la de el trillo,cada piedra en su agujéro.

So. It is euen as a threshing floore, euerie stone in his hole.

Sa. Quantos son de camaráda?

Sa. How many cabbin mates are you together?

So. Tres y con migo quatro.

So. Three,and with me fower.

Sa. Tantos pies tiene vn gato.

Sa. So many feete hath a cat.

So. çinco con el rábo.

So. He hath fiue with the taile.

Sa. Tienen buen aloxamiénto?

Sa. Haue all you good lodging?

So. Tal sea la salud de el aposentador que nos le dió.

So. I would to God such were the health of the Furriel which gaue it vs.

Sa. Como no es bueno?

Sa. How so,is it not good good?

So. Peór es vna çahurda de lechónes.

So. A pigstie is woorse.

Sa. Tienen huéspeda hermosa?

Sa. Haue you a faire Hostesse?

So. Hermósa señór sarjénto, yo piensо que los diablos son serafines en su comparación.

So. Faire master Sergeant,I thinke the diuels are Seraphines in respect of her.

Sa. Bueno es el encareçimiénto, que talle tiene?

Sa. You giue her good commendations, what handsomnes is in her?

So. Ella es mas viéja que *Metusalen*, mas arugada que vna pása, mas súzia que vna mosca, mas seca, que vn palo,diente y muela,como por la mano,la boca su-mída, como ojo de culo, los ojos el vno tuerto,y el otro que no se le sacaran con vn garaváto finalmente, toda ella es vn retráto

So. She is more olde then Methusalem, *more wrinkled thẽ a dried grape, or raisin,more filthie then *a flie, more drie then a sticke: teeth and cheek teeth as in ones hand, the mouth sunke in as the hole of the taile, the eies one quite out, and the other so sunke into her head that it cannot be plucke out with a hooke. In fine,all of her*

* Which goeth and sucketh euerie filthy wound or carrion.

retráto de la ynbídia.

her togither is the very picture of Ennie.

Sa. Eſſa tal ſerá v'nico remédio contra luxúria.

Sa. She muſt needes be the onely remedie againſt luſt.

So. Pues es lo bueno que con todas eſtas gráçias ſe afeita y repica.

So. But this is the beſt of her, which with all theſe good graces is painted out and ſpoken of.

Sa. Y v.m. no le haze el amór?

Sa. And do you not make loue to her?

So. Amór, o que boto a tal, no la acométa vn Tigre.

So. Loue, I ſweare by ſuch a one, a Tiger would not ſet vpon her.

Sá. A'nde, que para vn lava dientes no ſerá mala.

Sa. Goe foole ſhe is good enough to waſh ones mouth, and ſpet out againe.

So. Mas me los quiero traér ſúzios que no mal lavállos.

So. I had rather they ſhould bring my cloathes fowle then ill waſhed.

Sa. Mas yo créo, que es como dízen, ✻quien dize mal de la yégua, eſſe la lléva.

Sa. But I beleeue, it is as they ſay, he that diſpraiſeth the mare carrieth her away.

So. Par diez, no ſoy ſi no como la zórra que quando no púdo alcançár las v'bas, díxo vbas de parra, anſi como áſſi no las aviá gana.

So. By this ten bones I am no otherwiſe then the foxe, that when he could not reach the grapes ſaid grape of the vine, ſo euen ſo that he had no ſtomacke to eate them.

Sa. Aqui viene el cávo de eſquadra, veámos que nuevas trae. de donde viéne ſeñor cávo de es eſquadra?

Sa. Here comes the corporall, let vs ſee what newes hee brings. From whence come you Corporall?

Ca. De la bandéra.

Co. From the colours.

Sa. Queda alli el alférez?

Sa. Is the Ancient there?

C. No ſeñor, qué eſtá en cáſa de el capitán.

Co. No ſir, he is at the captaines houſe.

So. A el capitan y alférez déxo yo aóra en cáſa de el maeſtre de campo.

So. The captaine and Enſigne I left euen now in the camp maſters houſe.

Sa. Que nuévas ay por alla?

Sa. What newes there about?

Ca. Nuévas ciertas pocas, mentíras ynfinitas.

Co. Certaine newes verie fewe, lies infinite many.

Sa. Que ſe dize aóra en el cuerpo deguardia?

Sa. What ſay they now vpon the guarde?

Ca. Vnos dízen, que nos enbarcarémos para corrér la cóſta, otros que quedarémos aquí de preçídio, otros que yrémos a *Yrlanda*, no ay quien lo entiénda.

Co. One ſaies, we ſhall embarke our ſelues to skowre the coaſt, others that we ſhall remaine heere in garriſon, others that we ſhall goe for Ireland, *none can tell what.*

Sa. Todo eſſo es adivinár, cada vno loque deſéa o le eſtá bien.

Sa. All this is, enery one togeſſe at that which hee doth himſelfe deſire, or liketh well of.

Ca. Como dezia el otro capitán los ſoldados ſon profétas de el diáblo.

Co. As another captaine ſaide, Souldiers are prophets of the diuell.

Sa. Y tenía razón, porque aſſi como el diablo no ſáve lo por venír, ſi no que lo conjetúra aſſi házen ellos: y entre mil conjectúras que

Sa. And he ſaid well, for as the diuell doth not know, that which is to come, but by coniecture, ſo do they: & among a thouſand coniectures which they make

que házen, alguna han de açertár.

Ca. Tanbien ſe ſuena que el rey de Eſpaña, árma para venír contra *Inglaterra.*

Sa. Venga en óra buena, ſi tráe muchos dinéros que dexárnos.

S. Yo con vna cadéna de óro que valga cien libras me conténto.

Ca. Pues afee que no las ſuelen vendér muy baratas los Eſpañóles.

So. Y yo con vna onça de plomo la piénſo comprár.

Ca. Eſſo es hazér quenta ſin la huéſpeda: y quiça yréis por lána, y bolveréis treſquiládo: que adonde las dan las tóman.

So. Señór, ſi me matáren, tal dia hízo vn año, tanbien murió mi aguélo, ya eſtá oluidado a éſſo jugámos, oy por mi, mañana por ti, no tengo hijos que dexár huérfanos ni padre ni madre, ni perro que me ladre ✻ muera *Marta* y muera hárta.

Ca. Plegue a dios que quando llegue la ocación no ſe calçe vnas calças de villa *Diego.*

Sa. Señor tan buenos hombres ay por los pies como por las manos.

So. Por ſer mis oficiáles, vuéſtras mercédes me pueden dezír eſſo, peró ſi otro me lo dixéra, matára me con el.

Ca. No dezímos aquí, que lo hará, peró podriá aconteçér.

So. Tanbien ſe podría caér el çielo y nos cogería debaxo.

Sa. Demanéra que tanta dificultád ay en huýr v.m. como en caérſe el cielo.

Ca. El de la cama dize eſte ſoldádo.

So. No ſoy menór de edád que he meneſtér curadór, ſeñor cavo de eſquadra, yo ſabré reſponder por mi.

Ca. Siempre oy dezír, que vna buena obra ſepaga con vna mala.

So. ✻ No

make, they are to hit vpon one.

Co. In like ſorte, the rumor goeth that the king of Spaine makes preparation to come againſt England.

Sa. Let him come, if he bring good ſtore of crownes to leane vs.

So. I woulde content my ſelfe with a chaine of golde, that were woorth a hundred pound.

Co. But in faith the Spaniards are not wont to ſell them very good cheape.

So. And I hope to buie one with an ounce of lead.

Co. That is to reckon without the Hoſteſſe, and peradnenture you will goe for wooll, and returne home ſhorne, for where men gine there they receiue.

So. Sir, if they kill me, that daie made vp iuſt a yeere, in like manner died my grandfather, and nowe is forgotten, at this we play, to daie for me, to morrow for thee, I haue no children to leane orphanes, neither father, nor mother, nor dogge that barketh at mee, * *let* Marta *die, yet let her die full.*

Co. I pray God that when triall ſhall bee made, that you doe not * *put on the hoſe of the towne* Diego.

Sa. Sir there are as good men of their feet as of their hands.

So. In that you are my officers, you may ſay this vnto me, but if another ſhould ſay ſo, I would fight with him.

Co. We do not ſay heere, that you would doe ſo, but it might happen.

So. As well might * el Cielo *fall, and then it would catch vs vnder.*

Sa. So then it is as hard a matter for you to run away as for the skie to fall.

Co. This ſoldier ſpeaketh of the * Cielo *of his bed.*

So. I am not in my nonage, that I neede one to care for me, maſter Corporall I ſhall know how to anſwere for my ſelfe.

Co. I haue alwaies heard, that one good worke is requited with an euill.

So. Do

* *A man hauing a wife named* Marta *which he often beate for too much drinking, at laſt almoſt killing her ſhe ſaid,* Muera *Marta,* y muera harta.

* *i. Run away.*

* El cielo, *the skie. Alſo the teſter of a bed.*

* *i. Teſterne of the bed.*

So. ✻No ſabe v.m. que eſtá vna higa en Róma para el que da conſejo a quien no ſe le pide.

So. *Do you not know, that there is a ſloute for him in Rome, that giues counſell to him that requires it not at his hands.*

Sa. No ſe enoje ſeñor ſoldádo que ſe hará viéjo antes de tiempo.

Sa. *Be not angrie maſter ſoldier, for it wil make you old before your time.*

* *It cannot be woorſe then it is, or nothing can exceede the higheſt degree.*

So. ✻No puede ya ſér mas negro el cuérvo que ſus álas.

So **The crow cannot be blacker then her feathers.*

Sa. Señor cavo de eſquadra, vaya digale a el atambór que toque a recojer la guárdia.

Sa. *Corporall goe and tell the drum that he ſound to ſet the watch.*

Ca. Yo voy aguarde me aqui v.m.

Co. *I goe, tarrie for me here.*

So. Señór ſargento déxeme yr a jugár vn ráto antes que ſe meta la guárdia.

So. *Sergeant, let me go plaie at dice a little before the watch be ſet.*

Sa. Tanto le peſa eſſe dinero, que tal prieſſa tiene por echárlo de ſi.

Sa. *So troubleſome is his money to him, that he haſteth to throwe it from him.*

So. Yo mas querría doblállo.

So. *I woulde rather double it.*

Sa. ✻No ſave como díze vn refrán, ſi quieres tenér dineros tenéllos.

Sa. *Do you not knowe what the prouerbe ſaith, if you will haue money keepe it.*

So. De que ſírve tenér pocos o *Caſar* o náda.

So. *What good will a little do one? either an Emperour or nothing.*

Sa. Vaya con Dios, y pare lo a buen punto.

Sa. *Go in Gods name, and reſt when you are well.*

So. Dios me libre de vn azár.

So. *God keepe me from a hazard.*

Sa. ✻ Y ami de vellácos en quadrilla, y villános en gavílla, de moça adivína, y de vieja latína, de lodos a el caminár, y de larga enfermedád, de párrafo de legiſta, de ynfra de canoniſta, de eçetera de eſcrivano, y de réçipe de médico, de razón de diz que peró y ſi no, y de ſentençia de conque.

Sa. *And me from knaues in my ſquadrõ, & clownes* in ſhocks together, from a maide that is a propheteſſe; and an old woman a latiniſt; from durt in iourneies; and from long ſickneſs; from the paragraffe of the lawyer; from the infra of the Canoniſt; from the et cetera of the Scriuenour; from the recipe of the Phiſition; from that reaſon that ſaith, He ſaith that, but, if not; and from the ſentence of with which.*

* *i. Multitudes togither.*

Ca. Ya toca la caja a recojér.

Co. *Now ſounds the drum to ſet the watch.*

Sa. Vamos entre tanto a buſcár a el Sarjento mayór, para que me de el nombre.

Sa. *In the meane while let vs go ſeeke the Sergeant major, that he may giue me the worde.*

Ca. El eſtará en caſa de el generál.

Co. *He will be at the generals houſe.*

Sa. Vamos allá, que todo es camíno, es meneſtér que ésta noche aya muy buena guárdia.

Sa. *Let vs go thither, for it is all in our waie, it is needfull to night that there be a good guard.*

Ca. Por que ay alguna ſoſpecha?

Co. *Why, is there any ſuſpition of anie thing?*

Sa. Ay nuévas de enemigos, y aſſi es neçeſſário doblár las poſtas y reforçarlas, y ponér dos otres çentinelas

Sa. *There is newes of the enimie, and therfore needful to double the ſet men to watch, & to make them ſtrong, and*

çentinelas perdidas y que la ronda y contra ronda visíten amenúdo.

Ca. Pida v.m.a el sargento mayór, que nos den leña harta, para que aya buena lumbre en el cuerpo de guárdia.

Sa. Ansí será, y todas las armas estarán ✠ muy apunto que hombre aperçevído, médio combatído.

Ca. Me nestér será dar a los soldados pólvora, cuérda, y balas.

Sa. Todo se les dará y órden a los coseletes que no les falte piéça.

Ca. Qual es la mejór árma de las que vsámos en la guerra?

Sa. La pica es la réyna de las ármas.

Ca. Poco valdrián las pícas, sino se guarneciéssen con la arcabuçería, que dáña a el enemígo desde a fuera.

Sa. Menos valdría la arcabuzería, si despues de dada la carga, no tuviésse adonde repararse de la cavallería enemíga, y de todos los demás que le procuráren dañár.

Ca. Si, peró bien vemos que mayór daño se le haze a el enimígo con la arcabuzería, y mosquetería, que con las picas.

Sa. Todo ésse daño es poco en comparaçión de el que se reçibe a el desbarate de vn esquadrón o exército, el qual se figuiría luego con la cavallería, si las pícas que es vna murálla fuerte, no se pusiessen ala defensa.

Ca. Por ésso compáran a vn esquadrón bien formado, a el cuerpo vmáno donde los braços, y piernas, que son los que óbran son los arcabuzéros y las picas que están siempre firmes, y es de dó viene virtúd, a todas las partes de el esquadrón, el cuerpo y coraçón.

Sa. Assi es, y aunsi miráis la forma de vn esquadrón de los ordinários formado, con sus mángas, hallaréis en el, la misma forma de el cuerpo vmáno.

Ca. Que partes se requiére que tenga vn buen soldádo.

Sa. Muchas

*and to put two or three * lost centinels, and that the round & counterround may go very thicke.*

* *Those that lie close vnder the enimie to heare that they saie and do.*

Co. Require of the Sergeant maior, that hee giue vs woode enough, that there be a good fire vpon the body of the garde.

Sa. So it shall be, and all the armes to be very readie, for a man well warned halfe armed.

Co. It will be needfull to giue to the soldiers powder, match, bullets.

Sa. All shall be giuen them, and order for the corslets that they want no piece.

Co. Which is the best weapon, of those wee vse in warre?

Sa. The pike is the queene of weapons.

Co. Of little auaile were pikes, if they were not lined with shot, which hurteth the enimie a farre off.

Sa. Of lesse auaile were the shot, after they had discharged, if they had no place to defend themselues from the enimies horsemen, & all the rest which should endeuor to offend them.

Co. Yea, but we well see, that greater dammage is made to the enimie, by small shot and musket, then with pikes.

S. All this dammage is little in comparison of that is receiued at the ouerthrow of a squadron or armie, the which woulde followe straight with the horse, if the pikes, which is a strong wall, did not put themselues in defence thereof.

C. Hereby they compare a squadron well in order, to a mans bodie, where the armes and legs which are those that worke, as the shot and the pikes which stande alwaies firme, and from whence proceede force to all the parts of the squadron, to the bodie and hart.

S. Soit is, and also if you marke well the fashion of a squadron of the ordinarie squadrons made with his wings, you shall finde in it the very fashion of a mans bodie.

C. What parts are required in a good soldier?

Sa. Muchas,y muchos eſcriviéron de éſſa matéria, peró las mas neçeſſarias y ordinárias, yo las diré. El ſoldado, quanto a lo primero,deue ſer muy honróſo, porque ſoldádo ſin hónra ſería de ningun provécho, pues ella es la eſpuela que le ha de hazer obrár lo, que no báſtan prémios, ni ruégos, ni amenázas de ſus oficiales.

S. Many, and many haue written of this matter, but the moſt neceſſarie & ordinarie I will tell you. The ſoldier touching the firſt point, ought to be honorable, for a ſoldier without honor would profit little, becauſe it is the ſpur which driues him on to effect that, which rewards are not ſufficient to doe, nor intreaties, nor threatnings of his officers.

Ca. Por eſſo,deve el ſoldado traér,ſiempre eſcrita en la frénte aquella ✻ coplilla que díze,por la honra pon la vida, y pon las dos, honra y vida por tu Dios.

C. Therefore the ſoldier ſhould carrie alwaies written in his forehead this verſe, which ſaith, For thy honor hazard thy life, and hazard them both,honor and life for thy God.

S. Lo ſegundo deve ſér el ſoldado valiente no temeróſo ni covárde.

Sa. The ſecond, the ſoldier ought to be valiant, and not fearful nor coward.

C. ✻ El ſoldado couárde mas propiaménte ſe podría llamár eſpantájo,al qual quando los páxaros le pierden una vez el miédo,ſe aſientan ençíma de el, o como el Rey de las ránas.

Co A cowardly ſoldier may better be called, a thing made to feare away crowes, that when the birdes doe once caſt off their feare of the ſame, they ſit on the top of it, or as the king of frogs.

S. Como es éſſo de el Rey de las ránas?

Sa. How is that of the king of frogs?

C. Dizen, que en tiempo de mari caſtáña, las ránas deſſeáron tenér Rey como todas las demas naçiones, y pidiéron a *Iupiter* que era Rey de los dióces que les diéſſe Rey el qual viéndo ſu neçedád quiſo burlár de ellas, y díxo les que para un dia ſeñaládo les daría Rey,ellas le eſperávan con grande alegría, y venído aquel día, ſaliéron todas, de ſus caſas, muy compueſtas, como convenía para reçebír a ſu réy y puſiéronſe en la ſuperfiçie de el água eſperando; en eſte tiempo *Iupiter* arrojó deſde el çielo,vn gran madéro,que dió con el, en la laguna donde,ellas eſtávã,tan grã golpe,y hízo tan gran ruído que ellas fuéron todas turbadas, y aſombradas, y unas por aquí, y otras por allí,cada una huyó a ſu caſa, ſin oſár llegár, a hazér a ſu rey el devído acatamiénto,ni ſalír fuera en muchos dias quedóſe el madéro nadándo ençíma de el agua, y ellas con tanto temór

Co. They ſay, in olde time, when beaſtes could ſpeake, the frogs deſired to haue a king, as other nations had, and they requeſted Iupiter, *which was king of the Gods,that he would giue them a king, which ſeeing their ſimplicitie, would needs mock them a little,and told them that by a day appointed,he would giue them a king: they waited for it, with great ioy, and the day being come, all of them came foorth out of their houſes, well attired, as was fit for the receiuing of a king, and put themſelues vpon the vpper part of the water waiting: then* Iupiter *caſteth downe from heauen a great blocke, which lighted in the lake where they were: it gaue ſuch a blow, and made ſuch a noiſe, that they were all troubled,& amaſed; ſome this way, others that way, euery one ranne home to his houſe without daring to come neere, to make their due reuerence to their king, nor to come foorth a doores in many daies. The beame remai-*

ned

mór de vér cosa tan grande, que ninguna osáva salír fuera de su casa, y alli morían de hambre, hasta que poco apoco fue saliéndo la mas esforçada, y siguiéndo la las demas, cada dia yvan perdiéndo mas el temór, y se yvan llegando çerca de su rey, viendo le a el tan manso y que no se movía, ni les dezía mala palábra, al fin tanto continuáron y (como la mucha conversación es causa de menosprécio) se llegáron a su rey y viendo todas lo que éra, saltáron ençima de el, y començáron a cheriár y dar grandes risádas, haziéndo burla de su Rey, y de su temor passádo bolviéron pues, a ynsistír a *Iupiter* que en todo cáso les diésse Rey no tan mánso, si no que fuésse justiciéro, *Iupiter* viendo su neçia porfía les ymbió por Rey a la çigueña, la qual réyna hasta oy entre ellas, çebando se y comiendolas cada dia en pena de su loca petición, pues pudiendo bivír libres quisiéron mas hazér se esclávas y mas vn Rey cruél, que mánso y benígno.

ned there swimming vpon the water, & they with such feare, to see a thing so great, that none of them durst once go out of his dores, & therin they died with hunger, vntill that by little and little, the most hardiest of them went out, and the rest following, euery day they went more & more, loosing their fear, & they went neerer to their king seeing him so gentle, and that he mooned not, nor said neuer an ill worde to them, in the end they cõtinued so long, and (as much familiaritie oftentimes breedes contempt) they approched to their king, & seeing all of thẽ what he was, they leaped vpon him, & they began to crook & to break out into great laughters, making a iest of their king, and of their own passed feare: they returned afterward to importune Iupiter, *that by al meanes he woulde giue them a king, but not so still and quiet, but that he should be a iusticer*; Iupiter *seeing their foolish importunitie, sent the* Stork *to them for a king, she which raigneth til this day among thẽ, fatting himselfe, and eating them vp euery day, as a punishment for their fonde request, when they might haue liued at libertie they woulde make themselues slaues, and rather set vp a cruell king, then a benigne and gentle.*

Sa. No ha estádo malo el quento, y mejór es la moralidád.

Sa. The tale hath not beene ill, yet better is the morall thereof.

Ca. Dexémos ésso aóra, y prosíga v.m. adelánte con su plática de el buen soldádo.

Co. Let vs leaue this, and goe forward with your speech of the good souldier.

Sa. Lo tercero que ha de tenér ha de ser gran sufridór de travájos, y para esto deve ser de rézia complexión.

Sa. The third that he is to haue, is to be a great endurer of trauels, and for this he should be of a strong complexion.

Ca. Y a el que esso no tuviére, el diáblo le truxo a la guérra, como dízen de el moço vergonçóso, que el diablo le trájo a paláçio.

Co. And he that hath not this, the Diuell brought him to the warre, as it is said he brought the blushfaced yong man to the court.

Sa. Deve tanbien ser muy obediénte a sus oficiáles, y que haga de buena gana y sin mostrár mal Rostro lo que le ordenáren siendo de el servício de la Réyna.

Sa. He ought also to be very obedient to his officers, and that he performe that obedience with a good will, & without shewing an ill countenance to that they shall ordaine, being for the Queenes seruice.

Ca. Quiten le a la milicia la obediénçia

Co. Let them take away obedience in soldiers

çia en los ſoldados, y bolver ſe ha en confuſión *Babilónica.*

Sa. Otras muchas particularidádes, ha de tenér el buen ſoldádo, que yo no quiero tratár aora, quien las quiſiére vér, léa quatro o çinco tratádos que andan de ello en lengua Eſpañola vno de el capitán *Martin* de *Eguilúz* y otro de *Eſcaláte* otro de don *Fernando de Cordua*, y otro de don *Bernardino* de *Mendóza*, que alli lo verá bien pintádo.

Ca. A qui buelve nueſtro moſquetéro muy cabizbájo viéne, perdido deve de avér.

Sa. A ſeñór ſoldádo vna palabra.

So. Dexe me v.m. ſeñor Sarjento, baſta me mi mala ventura.

Sa. Que ha ſido, perdióſe toda el armada?

So. No topára yo aqui aóra con el velláco que eſte juego ynventó.

Sa. Que le quería dezír?

So. Reniego del diablo, ſi no le avía de hazér mas tajádas que púntos ſe han echádo en los dados des pues que él los ynventó.

Sa. ✠ Eſſo me parece echár la culpa de el aſno a la aluárda quien le mandó a v.m. jugár?

So. El Diablo que no duerme, y anda tras hazérme deſeſperar para llevárme.

Sa. Pues mire no le crea, ſino quando venga, diga le que por aora no puede yr, que eſtá ocupado en ſerviçio de ſu mageſtad, que ſe buelva otro día, y ſi no quiſiére deshagale la horquílla en la cabéça.

So. Muy bueno va eſſo, eſtóy yo rabiándo y eſta ſe v.m. burlando de mi.

Sa. Mire, yo le daré un buen remédio tomo dos onças de jaráve de paçiéncia, y quatro de unguénto de oluído y beualo todo, y con ello purgará éſſa malenconía y quedará luego buéno.

So. Serán dos purgas una tras otra deſpues

diers in war, and it will turne to a Babloni call *confuſion.*

Sa. The good ſoldier is to haue many other particulars, which I will not nowe handle, whoſoeuer will ſee them, let him reade fower or fiue treatiſes, which handle it in the Spaniſh toong, one of captaine Martin Eguiluz, *another of* Eſcalante, *another of* Don Fernando de Cordua, *and another of* Don Bernardin Mendoza, *there may it bee ſeene well ſet out.*

Co. Here comes backe againe our musketter, he comes hanging downe his head, it is likely he hath loſt.

Sa. Ho Soldier a word with you.

So. Let me alone Sergeant, it is enough that I haue ill lucke.

Sa. What hath happened, is all the fleete loſt?

So. I would not meete now with that villaine that inuented this play.

Sa. What would you ſay to him?

So. I renounce the deuill if I woulde not giue him more ſlaſhes then hath ſet pricks on dice, ſince he inuented them.

Sa. This ſeemes to me, to put the fault of the aſſe on the packeſaddle. Who commanded you to play?

So. The diuell which ſleepes not, and followes after mee to driue me into deſpaire, that he might carrie me away.

Sa. Then marke what I ſay, do not beleeue him, but when he commeth tell him, that for this time you cannot goe, that you are imployed in her Maieſties ſeruice, that he come another day, and if he will not, clap your muſket ſtaffe on his pate.

So. This goes well, I ſtand raging, and you mocking.

Sa. Behold, I will giue you a good remedie, Take two ounces of the ſirrupe of patience, and fower ounces of the oile of forgetfulneſſe, and drinke it off, and with this you ſhall purge this melancholy, and foorthwith you ſhall be well.

So. That will be two purges one after another

pues de purgada la bolſa purgár el cuérpo.

Sa. Pues nunca ha oydo dezír, que un clavo sáca otro, y una máno lava otra y entrambas la cara.

Ca. Pues como ſe dió tan preſto fin ala triſte tragédia.

So. Yo les diré a vueſtras merçédes como fue, el me dió a parár a onze, paré le quatro reales, echóme un enquentro, y tiromelos.

Sa. Mal prinçipio.

So. Antes ſuelen dezír, que es buen pronóſtico perdér la primer a mano.

Ca. No ay regla tan generál que no tenga eçepçión.

So. Dióme a parar luego a doze, que es mi ſuerte, paréle ocho reáles, écho un azár, díxe repárolos, o torgó me el repáro, lançó el dádo, y echó otro azár.

Sa. Pues pecadór, para que queríades mas de avér ganádo con quarenta otros quarenta, que mercadér ay que gane a çiento por çiento?

So. Señor, yo no me contenté ſino quíſe arrancár las clavos de la meſa como dízen, y díxe ſiete y llevar, dixo me, digole, Relança y echa ſu ſuerte, y arrebuja cõ todo ✻ ami dexóme del agalla, ſin blanca como el diablo ſe aparecio a ſan *Benito*.

Ca. ✻ Siempre lo verá, que quien todo lo quiere todo lo pierde.

So. ✻ Mas ſiempre deſpues de ydo el conéjo viene el conſejo.

Sa. ✻ Aóra bien quien érra y ſe enmiénda a Dios ſe encomienda.

So. La enmiénda ſerá empeñár el capotíllo, para bolvérme a eſquitár ſi puedo.

Sa. Eſſa no ſerá enmiénda ſino obſtinaçión.

So. ✻ Aqui perdí vna agúja, aqui la tengo de hallár.

Sa. No veis pecadór que ſe os cayó en la mar eſſa agúja, como la quereis hallár?

So. Yo

other, after the purſe is purged to purge the bodie.

Sa. Haue you neuer heard, that one naile drieth out another, one hand waſheth another, and both of them the face.

Co. But how made you ſuch a quicke ende of the ſad tragedie?

So. I will tell you how it was, he chaunced me a eleuen, I ſet him two ſhillings, he caſt and drew them.

Sa. An ill beginning.

So. Rather they are woont to ſay, it is a good ſigne to looſe the firſt hand.

Co. There is no rule ſo generall which hath not ſome exception.

So. He chanced me forth with twelue which is my chance, I ſet him fower ſhillings, he caſt a hazard, I ſaid I ſet againe, he allowes of it, he throwes the dice, & caſts another hazard.

Sa. Why wretched ſinner, what would you more then to gaine with fortie other fortie, what marchant is there which doth gaine a hundred for a hundred?

*So. I was not content but would pull in peeces the nailes of the table as they ſay, and I ſaide I ſet ſeuen times ſo much as he drew, he ſaid content, I ſaie content. He throwes againe the dice, & he drew vp al, and ſo he left me *hanging on the gill, without a farthing, as the diuell appeared to Saint* Benit. * As a fiſh.

Co. You ſhall alwaies ſee, he that all coueteth, all looſeth.

So. But after the ſteede ſtollen, ſhut the ſtable doore.

Sa. Now he that erres and amends, to God himſelfe commends.

So. The mends wil be to pawne the caſſock, to go again to quit my ſelfe if I can.

Sa. This will not be an amends but obſtinacie.

So. Heere loſt I a needle, and heere hope I to finde it againe.

Sa. Do you not ſee, that this needle fell into the ſea, how will you now finde it?

So. I

So. Yo me tengo de yr a vna hechizéra, que me de vna ſóga de ahorcádo, que dízen que es buena para hazér ganár.

So. I am to go to a witch that ſhe may giue me a rope of a hanged man, which they ſay is good to make one winne.

Ca. ✻ Caſtiga me mi madre y yo trómpoſe las.

Co. My mother doth chaſtice me, and I mocke and mewe at it.

Sa. Aora ſeñór vamos por aóra a metér la guárdia, que deſpues ſe tratara de eſſo.

Sa. Now ſir, let vs go euennow to ſet the watch, for afterwards we will talke heereof.

Ca. Vaya a llamar ſus camarádas.

Co. Go and call your Cameradoes.

So. Yo voy, beſo a vueſtras merçedes las manos.

So. I go, I take my leaue of you.

Ca. Yo tanbien quiero yr por mis armas.

Co. I will alſo go for my armes.

Sa. Yo me voy a la vandéra, alli eſperaré.

Sa. I goe to the colours, there will I tarrie.

FINIS.

62922